10863 637

THE

LIFE

OF

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK.

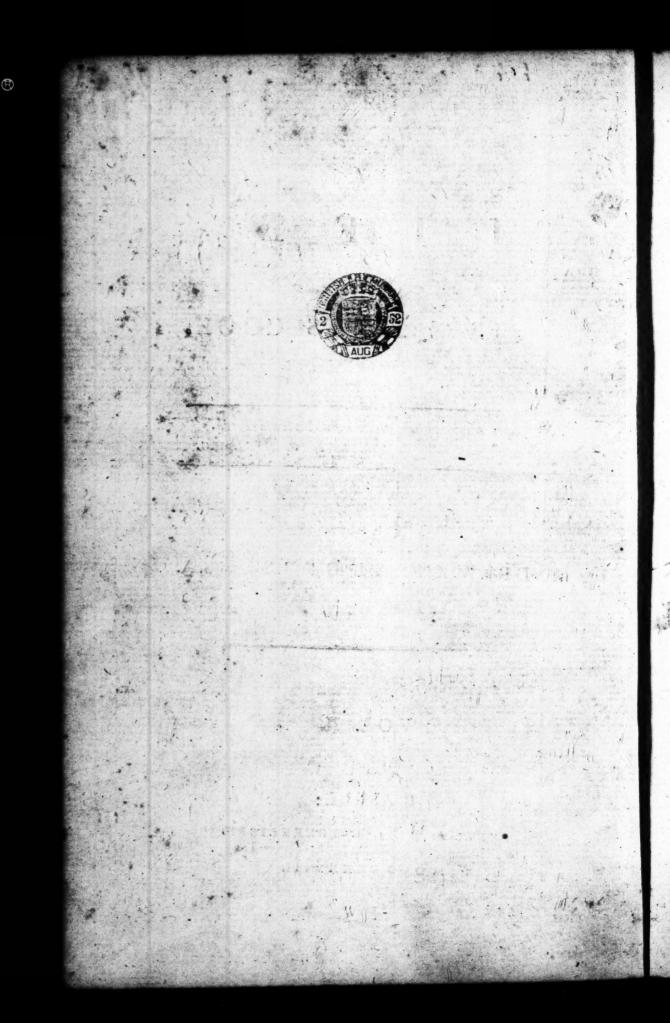
Totque Maris vastaque exhausta Pericula Terra.
VIRG.

BY

ANDREW KIPPIS, D. D. F. R. S. AND S. A.

VOL. IL

BASIL:
PRINTED BY J. J. TOURNEISEN.
M DCC LXXXVIIL



See Lection 1



CONTENTS

CHAPTER THE ELECTED

Character of Capa as Cook. — Here by by

SECOND VOLUME.

on the battle of his Service. A deput

CHAPTER THE FIFTH.

${f T}_{ m he}$ Hift	tory of	Capi	tain C	look	's Life	during
his feco	nd Voy	age i	ound	the	world	conti-
nued					•	page

CHAPTER THE SIXTH.

The	History	of Capt	ain Co	ok's L	ife, from
th	e Conclu	fion of h	is fecon	d Voya	ge round
					ent of his
V	oyage to	the Pac	ific Oce	ean	•

CHAPTER THE SEVENTH.

96

The History of Captain Cook's Life	fro	m the
Commencement of his Voyage to		British Charles Control of the Control
fic Ocean, to his Death .	,	

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER THE EIGHTH.

APPENDIXI O. V. C. V.



CWAPTER THE FIFTE

the Plays of Captain Cook's Life during the decord voyage round the world contract

CHAPTER THE SINGH.

The Hillory of Captain Could's Life, from the Conclusion of his Repoint Voyage round the World, to the Comparence of his Voyage to the Utific October States

CHAPTER THE SEVENTH

the lintary of Captain Cook's Life from the Commencers on he Vosegowa the Pacific Ocean, to his Truck

THE

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK.

CHAPTER THE FIFTH.

The History of Captain Cook's Life during his second Voyage round the world continued.

AFTER Captain Cook, agreeably to his late CHAP. resolution, had traversed a large extent of ocean without discovering land, he again directed his course to the fouthward. By the thirtieth of the month, through obstructions and difficulties, which, from their fimilar nature to those already mentioned, it would be tedious to repeat, he reached to the seventy-first degree of latitude *. Thus far had he gone; but to have proceeded farther would have been the height of folly and madness. It would have been exposing himself his men, and his ship to the utmost danger. and perhaps to destruction, without the least prospect of advantage. The Captain was of opinion, as indeed were most of the gentlemen on board, that the ice now in fight extended

VOL. II.

1774.

30 Jan.

^{*} The exact latitude at this time was 71° 10' fouth; and the longitude 106° 54' west.

CHAP. 1774.

quite to the pole, or might join to some land, to which it might be fixed from the earliest time. If, however, there be fuch land, it can afford no better retreat for birds, or any other animals, than the ice itself, with which it must be wholly covered. Though our Commander had not only the ambition of going farther than any one had done before, but of proceeding as far as it was possible for man to go, he was the less distatisfied with the interruption he now met with, as it shortened the dangers and hardships inseparable from the navigation of the fouthern polar regions. In fact, he was impelled by inevitable necessity to tack, and stand back to the north.

The determination which Captain Cook now formed was to fpent the enfuing winter within the tropic, if he met with no employment before he came there. He was well fatisfied that no continent was to be found in this ocean but what must lie so far to the south as to be wholly inacceffible on account of ice. If there existed a continent in the Southern Atlantic Ocean, he was fenfible that he could not explore it without having the whole fummer before him. Upon a supposition, on the other hand, that there is no land there, he might undoubtedly have reached the Cape of Good Hope by April. In that case, he would have put an end to the finding of a continent; which was indeed the first object of the voyage. But this could not fatisfy the extensive and magnanimous mind of our Commander. He had a good ship, expressly fent out on discoveries, a healthy crew, and



e.,

d

,

CHAP.

1774-

was not in want either of stores or of provisions. In fuch circumstances, to have quitted this Southern Pacific Ocean, would, he thought, have been betraying not only a want of perseverance, but of judgment, in supposing it to have been so well explored, that nothing farther could be done. Although he had proved that there was no continent but what must lie far to the fouth, there remained, nevertheless, room for very large islands in places wholly unexamined. Many, likewife, of those which had formerly been discovered had been but imperfectly explored, and their fituations were as imperfectly known. He was also perfuaded, that his continuing some time longer in this fea would be productive of improvements in navigation and geography, as well as in other

In consequence of these views, it was Captain Cook's intention first to go in search of the land said to have been discovered by Juan Fernandez, in the last century. If he should fail in sinding this land, he proposed to direct his course in quest of Easter Island or Davis's Land, the situation of which was known with so little certainty, that none of the attempts lately made for its discovery had been successful. He next intended to get within the tropic, and then to proceed to the west, touching at, and settling the situations of such islands as he might meet with till he arrived at Otaheite, where it was necessary for him

* In about the latitude of 38°.

CHAP, to stop, to look for the Adventure. It was also V. 1774.

in his contemplation to run as far west as the Tierra Austral del Espiritu Santo, which was discovered by Quiros, and to which M. de Bougainville has given the name of the Great Cyclades. From this land it was the Captain's plan to steer to the fouth, and so back to the east, between the latitudes of fifty and fixty. In the execution of this plan, it was his purpole, if possible, to attain the length of Cape Horn in the enfuing November, when he should have the best part of the summer before him, to explore the fouthern part of the Atlantic Ocean. 'Great as was this defign, our Commander thought it capable of being carried into execution; and when he communicated it to his officers, he had the fatisfaction of finding that it received their zealous and chearful concurrence. They displayed the utmost readiness for executing, in the most effectual manner, every measure he thought proper to adopt. With fuch good examples to direct them, the seamen were always obedient and alert; and on the present occasion, so far were they from wishing the voyage to be concluded, that they rejoiced at the prospect of its being prolonged another year, and of foon enjoying the benefits of a milder climate *.

In pursuing his course to the north, Captain Cook became well affured that the discovery of Juan Fernandez, if any fuch was ever made,

^{*} Cook's Voyages, ubi fupra, p. 250-271.

Co

ne

as

le

at

S

ie

V.

e,

n

e

e

it

it

d

d

r

d

-

t

7

t

1774

could be nothing more than a small island. At C H A P. this time, the Captain was attacked by a bilious colic, the violence of which confined him to his bed. The management of the ship, upon this occasion, was left to Mr. Cooper, the first officer, who conducted her entirely to his Commander's fatisfaction It was feveral days before the most dangerous symptoms of Captain Cook's disorder were removed; during which time, Mr. Patten the furgeon in attending upon him, manifested not only the skilfulness of a physician. but the tenderness of a nurse. When the Captain began to necover a favourite dog belonging to Mr. Forster fell a facrifice to his tender stomach. There was no other fresh meat whatever on board. and he could gat not only of the broth which was made of it, but of the flesh itself, when there was nothing elfe that he was capable of tafting. Thus did he derive nourishment and strength from food which to most people in Europe would have been in the highest degree difgusting, and productive of fickness. The negestity of the case overcame every feeling of diflike.

On the eleventh of March, our navigators came within fight of Easter Island, or Davis's Land *4 their transactions at which place were of too little moment to deserve a particular recital. The inhabitants are, in general, a flender race In colour, features, and language, they bea

The chart bash bash of and a sent of the band of the sent

^{*} It is fituated in the latitude of 27° 5' 30" fouth, and the longitude of 109 46' 20" west.

CHAP. V.

fuch an affinity to the people of the more western ifles, that there can be no doubt of their having been descended from one common original. It is indeed extraordinary that the fame nation should have spread themselves to so wide an extent, as to take in almost a fourth part of the circumference of the globe. With regard to the disposition of the natives of Easter Island, it is friendly and hospitable; but they are as much addicted to stealing as any of their neighbours. The island itfelf hath fo little to recommend its that no nation need to contend for the honour of its discovery. So fparing has nature been of her favours to this foot, that there is in it no fafe anchorage, no wood for fuel, no fresh water worth taking on board. The most remarkable objects in the country are fome furprizing gigantic statues, which were first feen by Roggewein, and of which Captain Cook has given a particular de-Scription to an in the state of the land o

It was with pleasure that our Commander quitted a place which could afford such stender accommodations to voyagers, and directed his course for the Marquelas Islands. He had not been long at sea, before he was again attacked by his bilious disorder. The attack, however, was not so violent as the former one had been. He had reason to believe, that the return of his disease was owing to his having exposed and satigued himself too much at Easter Island.

^{*} Cook's Voyages, ubi fupra, p. 274, 275. 284. 288.

CE

g

19

d

as

r-

G-

y

d d

a-).

S

e,

,

f

5

l

1774.

On the fixth and seventh of April, our navigat. CHAP. ors came within fight of four islands, which they knew to be the Marquesas. To one of them, which was a new discovery, Captain Cook gave 6,7 April. the name of HOOD's ISLAND, after that of the young gentleman by whom it was first feen. As foon as the ship was brought to an anchor in Madre de Dios, or Resolution Bay, in the Island of St. Christina, a traffic commenced, in the course of which the natives would frequently keep our goods, without making any return. At last the Captain was obliged to fire a musquet ball over one man who had feveral times treated the English in this manner. This produced only a temporary effect. Too many of the Indians baving come on board, our Commander, who was going in a boat, to find a convenient place for mooring the ship, said to the officers, "You must look " well after these people, or they will certainly a carry off something or other." Scarcely had he gotten into the boat, when he was informed that they had stolen an iron stanchion from the opposite gangway, and were carrying it off. Upon this he ordered his men to fire over the canoe till he could get round in the boat, but not to kill any one. Such, however, was the noise made by the natives, that the order was not heard; and the unhappy thief was killed at the first shot. All the Indians having retired with precipitation, in consequence of this unfortunate accident, Captain Cook followed them into the bay, prevailed upon fome of them to come

V.

alongside his boat, and, by suitable presents, so far conciliated their minds, that their sears seemed to be in a great measure allayed. The death of their countryman did not cure them of their thievish disposition; but, at length, it was somewhat restrained by their conviction that no distance secured them from the reach of our musquets. Several smaller instances of their talent at stealing, the Captain thought proper to overlook.

The provisions obtained at St. Christina were yams, plantains, bread-fruit, a few cocoa nuts. fowls, and fmall pigs. For a time, the trade was carried on upon reasonable terms; but the market was at last ruined by the indiscretion of some young gentlemen, who gave away in exchange various articles which the inhabitants had not feen before, and which captivated their fancy above nails, or more useful iron tools. One of the gentlemen had given for a pig a very large quantity of red feathers, which he had gotten at Amsterdam. The effect of this was particularly fatal. It was not possible to support the trade, in the manner in which it was now begun, even for a fingle day. When, therefore, our Commander found that he was not likely to be supplied, on any conditions, with fufficient refreshments, and that the island was neither very convenient for taking in wood and water, nor for affording the necessary repairs of the ship, he determined to proceed immediately to some other place, where the wants of his people could be effectually relieved. After having been ninefo

ned of

neir

melist-

ets.

eal-

ere

ts,

vas cet

me

ge

ot cy

of

ge.

at ly

e,

en

np-

b-

X r

,

teen weeks at fea, and having lived all that time CHAP. upon falt diet, a change in their food could not avoid being peculiarly desirable: and yet, on their arrival at St. Christina, it could scarcely be afferted that a fingle man was fick; and there were but a few who had the least complaint of any kind. "This," fays Captain Cook, in the narrative of his voyage, " was undoubtedly " owing to the many antifcorbutic articles we " had on board, and to the great attention of " the furgeon, who was remarkably careful to " apply them in time *." It may justly be added, that this was likewife owing to the fingular care of the Captain himself, and to the exertions of his authority, in enforcing the excellent regulations which his wisdom and humanity had adopted.

The chief reason for our Commander's touching at the Marquesas Islands, was to fix their situation; that being the only circumstance in which the nautical account of them, given in Mr. Dalrymple's collection, is deficient. It was farther desirable to settle this point, as it would lead to a more accurate knowledge of Mendana's other discoveries. Accordingly, Captain Cook Has marked the fituation of the Marquelas with his usual correctness t. He has also taken care to

* Cook's Voyages, ubi fupra, p. 297 - 305.

1774.

⁺ The Marquesas Islands, four of which were first discovered by Mendana, a Spaniard, are five in number, viz. La Magdalena, St Pedro, La Dominica, Santa Chriftina, and Hood's Island, which is the northernmost. La Domi-

V. in the island of St. Christina, which is most convenient for obtaining wood and water.

It is remarkable, with respect to the inhabitants of the Marquesas Islands, that, collectively taken, they are without exception the finest race of people in this sea. Perhaps they surpass all other nations in symmetry of form, and regularity of features. It is plain, however, from the affinity of their language to that of Otaheite and the Society Isles, that they are of the same origin. Of this affinity the English were fully sensible, though they could not converse with them; but Oedidee was capable of doing it tolerably well to

From the Marquesas Captain Cook steered for Otaheite, with a view of falling in with some of the islands discovered by former navigators, and especially by the Dutch, the situation of which had not been accurately determined. In the course of the voyage, he passed a number of low islots, connected together by reefs of coral rocks. One of the islands, on which Lieutenant Cooper went ashore, with two boats well armed, was called by the natives Tiookea. It had been discovered and visited by Captain

nica is the largest of them, being about fifteen or sixteen leagues in circuit. These islands occupy one degree of latitude, and nearly half a degree in longitude. Their latitude is from 9 to 10, and their longitude from 138° 47' to 139° 13' west.

+ Cook's Voyages, ubi fupra, 306 - 308.

^{*} Tiookea is fituated in the latitude of 14° 27' 30" fouth, and the longitude of 144° 56' west.

ly.

on-

itely

eft

ass

ru-

he

nd

in.

e, ut

1.

or

ne

rs,

of

In

er

of

ch

ts

*

n

a-

m

Byron. The inhabitants of Tiookea are of a much CHAP darker colour than those of the higher islands, and appeared to be more fierce in their dispofitions. This may be owing to their manner of gaining their sublistence, which is chiefly from the fea, and to their being much exposed to the fun and the weather. Our voyagers observed that they were flout, well made men, and that they had marked on their bodies the figure of a fish, which was a good emblem of their profession.

Besides passing by St. George's Islands, which had been fo named by Captain Byron, our Commander made the discovery of four others t. These he called PALLISER'S ISLES, in honour of his particular friend, Sir Hugh Pallifer. The inhabitants seemed to be the same fort of people as those of Tiookea, and, like them, were armed with long pikes. Captain Cook could not determine, with any degree of certainty, whether the group of ifles he had lately feen were, or were not, any of those that had been discovered by the Dutch navigators. This was owing to the neglect of recording, with fufficient accuracy. the fituation of their discoveries. Our Commander hath; in general; observed, with regard to this part of the ocean, that, from the latitude of twenty down to fourteen or twelve, and the season with a compression of the companies with

1774-

[†] The fituation of one of them was in latitude 15° 26' fouth, and in longitude 146° 20' west. Another was in latitude 15° 27' and longitude 146° 3'.

1774.

CHAP. from the meridian of a hundred and thirty-eight to a hundred and forty-eight or a hundred and fifty west, it is so strewed with low isles, that a navigator cannot proceed with too much caution.

22 April.

On the twenty-second of April, Captain Cook reached the Island of Otaheite, and anchored in Matavai Bay. As his chief reason for putting in at this place was to give Mr. Wales an opportunity of afcertaining the error of the watch by the known longitude, and to determine anew her rate of going, the first object was to land the instruments, and to erect tents for the reception of a guard, and fuch other people as it was necessary to have on shore. Sick there were none; for the refreshments which had been obtained at the Marquesas had removed every complaint of that kind.

From the quantity of provisions, which, contrary to expediation, our Commander now found at Otaheite, he determined to make a longer stay in the island than he had at first intended. Accordingly, he took measures for the repairs of the ship, which the high fouthern latitudes had rendered indispensably necessary.

During Captain Cook's stay at Otaheite, he maintained a most friendly connexion with the inhabitants; and a continual interchange of vifits was preserved between him and Otoo, Towha, and other chiefs of the country. His traffic with them was greatly facilitated by his having fortunately brought with him some red parrot feathers from the Island of Amsterdam. These were to ty

a

n.

ok ed

ig p-

ch

W

be

p-

as

re

b-

y

V a

1-

e

i-

=

e

5

1774.

jewels of high value in the eyes of the Otaheit- CHAP. ans. The Captain's stock in trade was by this time greatly exhaufted; fo that, if it had not been for the feathers, he would have found it difficult to have supplied the ship with the necesfary refreshments.

Among other entertainments which our Commander and the rest of the English gentlemen met with at Otaheite, one was a grand naval review. The velfels of war confifted of a hundred and fixty large double canoes, well equipped, manned, and armed. They were decorated with flags and streamers; and the chiefs, together with all those who were on the fighting stages, were dreffed in their war habits. The whole fleet made a noble appearance; fuch as our voyagers had never feen before in this fea, or could ever have expected. Besides the vessels of war, there were a hundred and feventy fail of smaller double canoes, which feemed to be defigned for transports and victuallers. Upon each of them was a little house; and they were rigged with mast and fail, which was not the case with the warcanoes. Captain Cook gueffed that there were no less than seven thousand seven hundred and fixty men in the whole fleet. He was not able to obtain full information concerning the delign of this armament.

Notwithstanding the agreeable intercourfe that was, in general, maintained between our Commander and the people of Otaheite, circumstances occasionally happened, which called for

6 H A P. V.

1774.

peculiar exertions of his prudence and resolution. One of the natives who had attempted to steal a water-calk from the watering-place, was caught in the fact, fent on board, and put in irons. In this fituation, he was feen by king Otoo, and other chiefs. Captain Cook having made known to them the crime of their countryman, Otoo entreated that he might be fet at liberty. This the Captain however refused, alleging, that fince he punished his own people, when they committed the least offence against Otoo's, it was but just that this man should also be punished, As Captain Cook knew that Otoo would not punish him, he refolved to do it himself. Accordingly, he directed the criminal to be carried on shore to the tents, and having himself followed, with the Chiefs and other Otaheitans, he ordered the guard out, under arms; and commanded the man to be tied up to a post, Otoo again solicited the culprit's release, and in this he was feconded by his fifter, but in vain. The Captain expostulated with him on the conduct of the man, and of the Indians in general; telling him, that neither he, nor any of the ship's company, took the smallest matter of property from them without first paying for it; enumerating the articles which the English had given in exchange for fuch and fuch things; and urging that it was wrong in them to steal from those who were their friends. He added, that the punishing of the guilty person would be the means of faving the lives of feveral of Otoo's

a

n

d

n

0

S

t

5

5

h

e

h

e

5

12

f

people, by deterring them from committing CHAP. crimes of the like nature, and thus preventing them from the danger of being shot to death, which would certainly happen, at one time or other, if they persisted in their robberies. With these arguments the king appeared to be satisfied, and only defired that the man might not be killed. Captain Cook then directed that the croud, which was very great, should be kept at a proper distance, and, in the presence of them all, ordered the fellow two dozen of lashes with a cat-of-nine-tails. This punishment the man fustained with great firmness, after which he was fet at liberty. When the natives were going away, Towha called them back, and, with much gracefulness of action, addressed them in a speech of nearly half an hour in length, the defign of which was to condemn their prefent conduct, and to recommend a different one for the future. To make a farther impression upon the minds of the inhabitants, our Commander ordered his marines to go through their exercises, and to load and fire in vollies with ball. As they were very quick in their manœuvres, it is more easy to conceive than to describe the amazement which possessed the Indians during the whole time, and especially those of them who had not feen any thing of the kind before.

The judicious will difcern, with regard to this narrative, that it throws peculiar light on Cap. tain Cook's character. Nor is it an uncurious circumstance in the history of human society;

V. 1774.

that a stranger should thus exercise jurisdiction over the natives of a country, in the presence of the prince of that country, without his authority, and even contrary to his solicitations.

Another disagreeable_altercation with the inhabitants of Otaheite, arose from the negligence of one of the English centinels on shore. Having either slept or quitted his post, an Indian seized the opportunity of carrying off his musquet. When any extraordinary theft was committed, it immediately excited fuch an alarm among the natives in general, from their fear of Captain Cook's refentment, that they fled from their habitations, and a stop was put to the traffic for provisions. On the present occasion, the Captain had no fmall degree of trouble; but, by his prudent conduct, the musquet was recovered, peace restored, and commerce again opened. In the differences which happened with the feveral people he met with in his voyages, it was a rule with him, never to touch the least article of their property, any farther than to detain their canoes for a while, when it became absolutely necessary. He always chose the most mild and equitable methods of bringing them to reason; and in this he not only succeeded, but frequently put things upon a better footing than if no contention had taken place.

During this visit to Otaheite, fruit and other refreshments were obtained in great plenty. The relief arising from them was the more agreeable and falutary, as the bread of the ship was in a

bad

al

m

b

F

vi th

iΩ

k

al th

W

es C

CC

as

er

fh

ſp

n

ce

is

1-

ce

g

d

t.

e

n

ir

0-

y I,

d.

le

it

r-

e-

ie

f

0

ıt

n

r

e

e

a

bad condition. Though the biscuit had been aired and picked at New Zealand, it was now in such a state of decay, that it was necessary for it to undergo another airing and cleaning, in which much of it was found wholly rotten, and unsit to be eaten. This decay was judged to be owing to the ice our navigators had frequently taken in when to the southward, which made the hold of he vessel cold and damp, and to the great heat hat succeeded when they came to the north. Whatever was the cause, the loss was so considerable, that the men were put to a scanty allowance in this article, with the additional mortification of the bread's being bad that could be used.

Two goats; that had been given by Captain Furneaux to Otoo, in the former part of the voyage, seemed to promise fair for answering the purposes for which they were left upon the island. The ewe, foon after, had two female kids, which were now fo far grown as to be almost ready to propagate. At the same time, the old ewe was again with kid. The people were very fond of them, and they were in excellent condition. From thefe circumstances! Captain Cook entertained a hope that, in a course of years, they would multiply so much as to be extended over all the ifles of the Southern Ocean. The like success did not attend the sheep which had been left in the country. These speedily died, one excepted, which was faid to be yet alive. Our navigators also furnished the

Vol. II.

V. 1774.

8

V. than twenty at Otaheite, besides some which had been made presents of at Ulietea and Huaheine.

With regard to the number of the inhabitants of Otaheite, our Commander collected, from comparing feveral facts together, that, including women and children, there could not be lefs, in the whole island, than two hundred and four thousand. This number, at first sight, exceeded his belief. But when he came to reflect on the vast swarms of people that appeared wherever he went, he was convinced that the estimate was

agreeable to truth.

Such was the friendly treatment which our voyagers met with at Otaheite, that one of the gunner's mates was induced to form a plan for remaining in the country. As he knew that he could not execute his scheme with success while the Resolution continued in Matavai Bay, he took the opportunity, when she was ready to quit it, and the fails were fet for that purpose, to flip overboard. Being a good swimmer, he had no doubt of getting fafe to a canoe, which was at fome distance ready to receive him; for his design was concerted with the natives, and had even been encouraged by Otoo. However, he was discovered before he had gotten clear of the ship, and a boat being prefently hoisted out, he was taken up, and brought back to the vessel. When our Commander reflected on this man's fituation, he did not think him very culpable, or his defire of staying in the island so extraordinary as might

F

u

0

ess

ad

nts

m

ng

in

ur

ed

he

he

vas

our

the

for

he

ile

ok

it,

Nip

no

at

gn

ren |

vas

up,

vas

nen

n,

fire

ght

V.

1774:

at first view be imagined. He was a native of C it A f. Ireland, and had failed in the Dutch service. Captain Cook, on his return from his former voyage, had picked him up at Batavia, and had kept him in his employment ever fince. did not appear that he had either friends or connexions which could bind him to any paricular part of the world. All nations being like to him, where could he be more happy han at Otaheite? Here, in one of the finest climates of the globe, he could enjoy not only the necessaries, but the luxuries of life, in eafe and plenty. The Captain feems to think, that if the man had applied to him in time, he might have given his confent to his remaining in the country.

On the fifteenth of May, Captain Cook anchored in O'Wharre Harbour, in the island of Huaheine. He was immediately visited by his friend Oree, and the same agreeable intercourse subfisted between the Captain and this good old Chief which had formerly taken place. Red feathers were not here in fuch estimation as they had been at Otaheite; the natives of Huaheine having the good fense to give a preference to the more useful articles of nails and axes. During the stay of our voyagers in the island, some alarms were occasioned by the thievish disposition of several of the inhabitants; but matters fublided without any material consequences. A folemn march, which our Commander made through part of the country, at the head of forty-eight men,

14 May.

V.

tended to impress the Indians with a sense of his power and authority. In fact, their attempts at stealing had been too much invited by the indiscretion of some of the English, who unguardedly separated themselves in the woods, for the purpose of killing birds; and who managed their musquets so unskilfully, as to render them less formidable in the eyes of the natives.

I cannot persuade myself to omit a dramatic entertainment, at which feveral of the gentlemen belonging to the Resolution attended one evening. The piece reprefented a girl as running away with our navigators from Otaheite; and the story was partly founded in truth; for a young woman had taken a paffage in the ship, down to Ulietea. She happened to be present at the representation of her own adventures; which had fuch an effect upon her, that it was with great difficulty that she could be prevailed upon by the English gentlemen to see the play out, or to refrain from tears while it was acting. The piece concluded with the reception which she was supposed to meet with from her friends at her return; and it was a reception that was by no means favourable. As these people, when they fee occasion, can add little extempore pieces to their entertainments, it is reasonable to imagine that the representation now described was intended as a fatire against the girl, and to discourage others from following her steps. Such is the fense which they entertain of the propriety of female decorum.

H

0

h

a

h fi

F

t]

it

his

at

lif-

lly

ur-

eir ess

tic en

g.

ay

he

ng

vn he

ch

th

on

t,

he

at

y

en

re

to

d

0

h

y

1774.

During Captain Cook's stay at Huaheine, bread-fruit, cocoa - nuts, and other vegetable productions were procured in abundance, but not a sufficiency of hogs to supply the daily expence of the ship. This was partly owing to a want of proper articles for traffic. The Captain was obliged, therefore, to set the smiths at work, to make different sorts of nails, iron tools, and instruments, in order to enable him to obtain esreshments at the islands he was yet to visit, and to support his credit and influence among the natives.

When our Commander was ready to fail from Huaheine, Oree was the last man that went out of the vessel. At parting, Captain Cook told him that they should meet each other no more; at which he wept, and said, "Let your sons, come, we will treat them well."

At Ulietea, to which the Captain next directed his course, the events that occurred were nearly similar to those which have already been related. He had always been received by the people of this island in the most hospitable manner, and they were justly entitled to every thing which it was in his power to grant. They expressed the deepest concern at his departure, and were continually importuning him to return. Oreo the Chief, and his wise and daughter, but especially the two latter, scarcely ever ceased weeping. Their grief was so excessive, that it might perhaps be doubted whether it was entirely sincere and unaffected; but our Commander was of opinion

C H A P. V. that it was real. At length, when he was ready to fail, they took a most affectionate leave. Oreo's last request to Captain Cook was that he would return; and when he could not obtain a promise to that effect, he asked the name of his burying-place. To this strange question the Captain answered, without hesitation, that it was Stepney; that being the parish in which he lived when in London. Mr. Forster, to whom the same question was proposed, replied, with greater wisdom and recollection, that no man, who used the sea, could say where he should be buried.

As our Commander could not promife, or even then suppose, that more English ships would be fent to the fouthern isles, Oedidee, who for so many months had been the faithful companion of our navigators, chose to remain in his native country. But he left them with a regret fully demonstrative of his esteem and affection, nor could any thing have torn him from them, but the fear of never returning. When Oreo preffed fo ardently Captain Cook's return, he fometimes gave fuch answers as left room for hope. At thefe answers Oedidee would eagerly catch, take him on one fide, and alk him over again. The Captain declares, that he had not words to describe the anguish which appeared in this young man's breast, when he went away. "He looked up at the ship, burst into tears, and then sunk down into the canoe." Oedidee was a youth of good parts, and of a docile, gentle, and humane dispody

ve-

nat

ain

of

he

it

he

m

th

n,

be

or

ld

or

on

ve

ly

or

ut

ed

es

lt

CE

1e e 's

at

n

d

>

1774.

fition; but as he was almost wholly ignorant of CHAR. he religion, government, manners, customs, nd traditions of his countrymen, and the neighbouring islands, no material knowledge could have been collected from him, had our Commander brought him away. He would, however, in every respect, have been a better specimen of he nation than Omai.

When Captain Cook first came to these islands, e had fome thoughts of vifiting Tupia's famous Bolabola. But having obtained a plentiful supply of refreshments, and the route he had in view allowing him no time to spare, he laid this design aside, and directed his course to the west. Thus did he take his leave, as he then thought, for ever, of these happy isles, on which benevolent nature has fpread her luxuriant fweets with a lavish hand; and in which the natives, copying the bounty of Providence, are equally liberal; being ready to contribute plentifully and chearfully to the wants of navigators *.

On the fixth of June, the day after our voyagers left Ulietea, they faw land, which they found to be a low reef island, about four leagues in compass, and of a circular form. This was Howe Island, which had been discovered by

6 June,

* Cook, ubi supra, p. 312 - 378.

From Mr. Wales's observations it appeared, that, during five months, in which the watch had passed through the extremes of heat and cold, it went better in the cold than in the hot climates.

CO

e

Co

ea

ie

Ai

v

ch

fo,

as

To

iic

bo

t

in

th

ar

m

n

C H A F. V. 1774. 16 June.

0.

Captain Wallis *. Nothing remarkable occurred from this day to the fixteenth, when land was again feen. It was another reef island; and being a new discovery, Captain Cook gave it the name of PALMERSTON ISLAND, in honour of Lord Palmerston t. On the twentieth, fresh land appeared, which was perceived to be inhabited. This induced our Commander to go on shore with a party of gentlemen; but the natives were found to be fierce and untractable. All endeavours to bring them to a parley were to no purpose; for they came on with the ferocity of wild boars, and instantly threw their darts. Two or three musquets discharged in the air, did not prevent one of them from advancing still farther, and throwing another dart, or rather a spear, which passed close over Captain Cook's shoulder. The courage of this man had nearly cost him his life. When he threw his spear, he was not five paces from the Captain, who had refolved to shoot him for his own preservation. It happened, however, that his musquet missed fire; a circumstance on which he afterwards reflected with pleasure. When he joined his party, and tried his mufquet in the air, it went off perfectly well. This island, from the disposition and behaviour of the natives, with whom no inter-

^{*} Its latitude is 16° 46' fouth, and its longitude 154° 8' west.

[†] It is fituated in latitude 18° 4' fouth, and in longitude 163° 10' west.

ed

as

ng

ne

rd

be d.

re es

11

10 of

0

ot

١, ,

r.

n

t

d

)-

a d

d

V

f

•

course could be established, and from whom no CHAP. enefit could be received, was called by our Commander SAVAGE ISLAND *. It is about eleven eagues in circuit; is of a round form, and good eight; and has deep waters close to its shores. Among its other disadvantages, it is not furished with a harbour.

In pursuing his course to the west-south-west, aptain Cook passed by a number of small lands, and, on the twenty-fixth, anchored on he north fide of Anamocka, or Rotterdam. A raffic immediately commenced with the natives, who brought what provisions they had, being chiefly yams and shaddocks, which they exchanged for nails, beads, and other small articles. Here, as in many former cases, the Captain was put to some trouble on account of the thievish disposition of the inhabitants. As they had gotten possession of an adze and two musquets, he found t necessary to exert himself with peculiar vigour, in order to oblige them to make restitution. For this purpose he commanded all the marines to be armed, and fent on shore, and the result of this meafure was, that the things which had been stolen were restored. In the contest, Captain Cook was under a necessity of firing some small thot at a native who had distinguished himself by his resistance. His countrymen afterwards reported that he was dead; but he was only

26 June

1774.

^{*} Its situation is in latitude 19° 1' fouth, and in lon situde 169° 37' west,

GHAP. wounded, and that not in a dangerous manner. Though his fufferings were the effects of his own V. misbehaviour, the Captain endeavoured to soften 1774. them, by making him a present, and directing his wounds to be dreffed by the furgeon of the

fhip.

The first time that our Commander landed at Anamocka, an old lady presented him with a girl, and gave him to understand that she was at his fervice. Mifs, who had previously been instructed, wanted a spike - nail, or a shirt, neither of which he had to give her; and he flattered himself that, by making the two women fensible of his poverty, he should easily get clear of their importunities. In this, however, he was mistaken. The favours of the young lady were offered upon credit; and on his declining the proposal, the old woman began to argue with him, and then to abuse him. As far as he could collect from her countenance and her actions, the design of her speech was both to ridicule and reproach him, for refusing to entertain so fine a young woman. Indeed, the girl was by no means destitute of beauty; but Captain Cook found it more eafy to withstand her allurements than the abuses of the ancient matron, and therefore hastened into his boat.

While the Captain was on shore at Anamocka, he got the names of twenty islands, which lie between the north-west and the north-east. Some of them were in fight; and two of them, which are most to the west, are remarkable on account

er.

vn

en

ng

he

at

a

at

en

rt,

he

en

ar

he

ly

ng

ie

ne

s,

nd

a

10

k

ts

e-

a,

ie

10 h

ıt

f their great height. These are Amattafoa and CHAP. Ighao. From a continual column of smoke which as feen daily afcending from the middle of mattafoa, it was judged that there was a olcano in that island.

Anamocka was first discovered by Tasman, nd by him was named Rotterdam *. It is of a langular form, and each fide extends about ree and a half or four miles. From the northest to the south of the island, round by the ift and north, it is encompassed by a number of nall isles, fand-banks, and breakers. An end could ot be feen to their extent to the north, and they ay possibly reach as far to the south as Amsterlam, or Tongataboo. Together with Middleurg, or Eapowe, and Pilstart, these form a group ontaining about three degrees of lautude, and wo of longitude. To this group Captain Cook ad given the name of the Friendly Isles, or rchipelago, from the firm alliance and friendhip which seemed to subsist among their inhabitnts, and from their courteous behaviour to trangers. The fame group may perhaps be xtended much farther, even down to Boscawen nd Keppel's Isles, which were discovered by aptain Wallis, and lie nearly in the fame neridian *.

Whilst our Commander was at Anamocka, he vas particularly affiduous to prevent the introduc-

* In the latitude of 15° 53'.

^{*} It is situated in the latitude of 29° 15' fouth, and ie longitude of 174 31 west.

CHAP. tion of a certain disorder. As some of his people V. brought with them the remains of this disease from 1774. the Society Isles, he prohibited them from having any semale intercourse; and he had reason to believe that his endeavours were successful.

The productions of Rotterdam, and the perfons, manners, and customs of its inhabitants, are similar to those of Amsterdam. It is not, however, equally plentiful in its fruits, nor is every part of it in so high a state of cultivation. Neither hath it arisen to the same degree of wealth, with regard to cloth, matting, ornaments, and other articles, which constitute the chief riches of the islanders of the Southern Ocean †.

h

h

CO

g

tl

fa

to

C

tl

aı

e

fo

tl

fa

a

T S

I July.

Pursuing their course to the west, our navigators discovered land on the first of July; and, upon a nearer approach, sound it to be a small island, to which, on account of the number of turtle that were seen upon the coast, Captain Cook gave the name of Turtle Isle *. On the sixteenth, high land was seen bearing south-west, which no one doubted to be the Tierra Austral del Espiritu Santo of Quiros, and which is called by Mr. de Bougainville the Great Cyclades. After exploring the coast for some days, the Captain came to an anchor, in a harbour in the island of Mallicollo. One of his first objects was to commence a friendly intercourse with the

round the World, Vol. II. p. 1-21.

* It is fituated in latitude 19° 48' fouth, and in longitude 178° 2' west.

[†] Captain Cook's Voyage towards the South Pole, and round the World, Vol. II. p. 1 - 21.

ple

om

ng

to

erts,

is

on.

of

ts,

ief

at-

all

of

in

he

A,

al

ed

5.

1e

ne

as

ıd

n-

natives; but, while he was thus employed, an ccident occurred which threw all into confusion, hough in the end it was rather advantageous han hurtful to the English. A fellow in a canoe, aving been refused admittance into one of our boats, bent his bow to shoot a poisoned arrow t the boat-keeper. Some of his countrymen aving prevented his doing it at that instant, me was given to acquaint our Commander with the transaction, who immediately ran upon leck. At this minute, the Indian had directed his bow to the boat-keeper; but upon being called to by Captain Cook, he pointed it at him. Happily, the Captain had a musquet in his hand loaded with fmall shot, and gave him the contents. By this, however, he was only staggered for a moment; for he still held his bow in the attitude of shooting. A second discharge of the fame nature made him, drop it, and obliged him, together with the other natives who were in the canoe, to paddle off with all possible celerity. At this time, some of the inhabitants began to shoot arrows from another quarter. A musquet discharged in the air had no effect upon them; but no fooner was a four-pound ball shot over their heads than they fled in the utmost confusion.

A few hours after these transactions, the English put off in two boats, and landed in the face of four or five hundred people, who were assembled on the shore; and who, though they were all armed with bows and arrows, clubs and spears, made not the least opposition. On the

V. 1774.

CHAP. V. contrary, when they faw Captain Cook advance with nothing but a green branch in his hand, one of them, who appeared to be a Chief, giving his bow and arrows to another, met the Captain in the water, bearing also a green branch. These being mutually exchanged in token of friendship, the chief led our Commander to the crowd, to whom he immediately distributed presents. The marines, in the mean time, were drawn up on the beach. Captain Cook then acquainted the Indians, by signs, that he wanted wood; and in the same manner permission was granted him to cut down the trees.

Much traffic could not be carried on with these people, because they set no value on nails, or iron tools, or, indeed, on any of the articles which our navigators could furnish. In fuch exchanges as they did make, and which were principally of arrows for pieces of cloth, they diftinguished themselves by their honesty. When the ship had begun to fail from the island, and they might eafily, in consequence of their canoes dropping aftern, have avoided delivering the things they had been paid for, they used their utmost efforts to get up with/her, that they might discharge their obligations. One man, in particular, followed the Refolution a confiderable time, and did not reach her till the object which brought him was forgotten. As foon as he came alongfide the veffel, he held up the thing which had been purchased; and though several of the crew offered to buy it, he infifted upon deliverice

d,

ng

ain

efe

ip,

to

he

on

he

nd

im

ith

ils,

les

ch

ere

ey

en

nd

es

he

eir

ey

in

ole

ch

ne

chi

he

er-

ing it to the person to whom it had been sold. That person, not knowing him again, would have given something in return; but this he refused, and shewed him what he had before received. There was only a single instance in which the natives took, or even attempted to take, any thing from our voyagers, by any means whatever; and in that case restitution was mmediately made, without trouble and without altercation.

The inhabitants of Mallicollo, in general, are the most ugly and ill-proportioned people that Captain Cook had ever feen, and are in every respect different from all the nations which had been met with in the Southern Ocean. They are a very dark-coloured, and rather a diminutive race, with long heads, flat faces, and countenances which have some resemblance to that of the monkey. Their hair, which is mostly black or brown, is short and curly; but not altogether fo foft and woolly as that of a negro. The difference of this people from any whom our Commander had yet visited, appeared not only in their persons but their language. Of about eighty words which were collected by Mr. Forster, scarcely one was found to bear any affinity to the language spoken in any country or island hitherto described. It was observed by Captain Cook, that the natives could pronounce most of the English words with great ease. They had not fo much as a name for a dog, and knew nothing of that animal; for which reason the

C H A P. V. V. were very fond of them, it was highly probable 1774. that the breed would be fostered and encreased.

To the harbour, in which our Commander anchored, while he lay at Mallicollo, he gave the name of PORT SANDWICH*. It has many advantages, with regard to depth of water, shelter from winds, and lying so near the shore as to be a cover to those of a ship's company who may be carrying on any necessary operations at land †.

23 July.

Soon after our navigators had gotten to fea, which was on the twenty-third of July, they discovered three or four small islands, that before had appeared to be connected. At this time the Resolution was not far from the Isle of Ambrym, the Isle of Pacom, and the Isle of Apee. On the next morning, several more islands were discovered, lying off the south-east point of Apee, and constituting a group which Captain Cook called SHEPHERD'S ISLES, in honour of his learned and valuable friend, Dr. Shepherd, Plumian Professor of Astronomy at Cambridge. The ship was this day in some danger. It suddenly fell calm, and our voyagers were left to the mercy of the current, close by the isles, where no foundings could be found with a line of a

hundred !

n

^{*} It is fituated on the north-east fide of Mallicollo, not far from the fouth-east end, in latitude 16° 25' 20" fouth, and longitude 167° 57' 23" east.

⁺ Cook's Voyages, ubi fupra, p. 23 - 37.

ey

ble

ed.

ler

ve

ny

er,

ore

ny

ns

a,

ey

ore

he

m,

On

ere

of

ain

his d.

ge.

nly

he

ere

a

not

011

hundred and eighty fathoms. The lands or islands which lay around the vessel in every direction, were so numerous that they could not be counted. At this criss a breeze sprung up, which appily relieved the Captain and his company rom the anxiety the calm had, occasioned.

Amidst the number of islands, that were connually seen by our navigators, there was only ne on which no inhabitants were discerned. This consisted chiefly of a remarkable peaked ock, which was only accessible to birds, and which obtained the name of the MONUMENT.

In the farther course of the ship to the southvard, our navigators drew near to certain lands, which they found to confift of one large island, he fouthern and western extremities of which xtended beyond their fight. Three or four maller ones lay off its north fide. To the two rincipal of these Captain Cook gave the name of Montagu and Hinchingrook; and the arge island he named SANDWICH, in honour of is noble patron the Earl of Sandwich. fland, which was spotted with woods and lawns, greeably diversified over the whole surface, and which had a gentle flope from the hills down o the sea-coast, exhibited a most beautiful and lelightful prospect. The examination of it was ot, however, so much an object with our Comnander, as to proceed to the fouth, in order to nd the fouthern extremity of the Archipelago.

Pursuing his discoveries, Captain Cook came a sight of an island, which was afterwards Vol. II.

V. 1774.

V. 1774. 3 August.

known to be called by the natives Erromango. After coasting it for three days, he brought his vessel to anchor in a bay there, on the third of August. The next day, he went with two boats to examine the coast, and to look for a proper landing-place, that he might obtain a fupply of wood and water. At this time, the inhabitants began to affemble on the shore, and by signs to invite our people to land. Their behaviour was apparently fo friendly, that the Captain was charmed with it; and the only thing which could give him the least fuspicion was, that most of them were armed with clubs, spears, darts, and bows and arrows. He did not, therefore, remit his vigilance; but kept his eye continually upon the Chief, watching his looks, as well as his actions. It foon was evident that the intentions of the Indians were totally hostile. They made a violent attempt to feize upon one of the boats; and though, on our Commander's pointing a musquet at them, they in some measure desisted, yet they returned in an inftant, feemingly determined to carry their defign into execution. At the head of the party was the Chief; while others, who could not come at the boat, stood behind with darts, stones, and bows and arrows in hand, ready to support their countrymen. As figns and threats had no effect, the fafety of Captain Cook and his people became the only object of confideration; and yet he was unwilling to file on the multitude. He refolved, therefore, to make the Chief alone the victim of

TO.

215

of

ats

er

of

oe-

ite

a-

ed

ve

m

WS

113

he

ns.

he

nt

bn

ret

ret

er-

At

ile

bc

WS

As

of

ly

il-

d,

of

V.

1774.

is own treachery, and accordingly, aimed his CHAP. usquet at him; but at this critical moment it iffed fire. This circumstance encouraged the atives to despise our weapons, and to shew he fuperiority of their own, by throwing stones ad darts, and by shooting arrows. Hence it came absolutely necessary for the Captain to ve orders to his men to fire upon the affailants. he first discharge threw them into confusion; it a fecond was fcarcely sufficient to drive em off the beach. In consequence of this skirish, four of the Indians lay, to all appearance, ead on the shore. However, two of them were fterwards perceived to crawl into the bushes; nd it was happy for these people that not half f the musquets of the English would go off, nce otherwife many more must have fallen. The habitants were, at length, fo terrified as to ake no farther appearance; and two oars which had been lost in the conflict, were left landing up against the bushes.

It was observed of these islanders, that they emed of a different race from those of Mallicollo. nd that they spoke a different language. They re of a middle fize, with a good shape, and blerable features. Their colour is very dark; nd their aspect is not mended by a custom they ave of painting their faces, some with a black, nd others with a red pigment. As to their hair, is curly and crifp, and fomewhat woolly. he few women who were feen, and who peared to be ugly, wore a kind of petticoat,

D 2

V. 1774.

made either of palm leaves or of a plant similar in its nature; but the men, like those of Mallicollo, were almost entirely naked. On account of the treacherous behaviour of the inhabitants of Erromango, Captain Cook called a promontory; or peninfula, near which the skirmish

happened, TRAITOR'S HEAD *.

. From this place the Captain failed for an island which had been discovered before, at a distance, and at which, on account of his wanting a large quantity of wood and water, he was resolved to make some stay. At first the natives were disposed to be very hostile; but our Commander, with equal wisdom and humanity, contrived to terrify them, without danger to their lives. This was principally effected by firing a few great guns, at which they were fo much alarmed, as afterwards to be brought to tolerable order. Among these islanders, many were inclined to be on friendly terms with our navigators, and especially the old people; whilft most of the younger were daring and infolent, and obliged the English to keep to their arms. It was natural enough that age should be prudent and cautious, and youth bold and impetuous; and yet this distinction, with regard to the behaviour of the various nations which had been visited by Captain Cook, had not occurred before.

^{*} It is the north-east point of the island, and is situated in the latitude of 18° 43' fouth, and the longitude of 169 28' eaft.

ilar

Illi-

int

nts

on-

ish

nd

ce,

ge

to

fed

ith

ify

vas

ıs,

er-

ng

on

lly

ere

to

nat

th

n,

na-

k,

ted of The island where the Captain now stayed, was CHAP ound, upon enquiry, to be called, by the in-V. abitants, Tanna; and three others in its neighlourhood, and which could be seen from it, were distinguished by the names of Immer, Erronan or Footoona, and Annatom.

From fuch information of the natives as our ommander could see no reason to doubt, it ppeared that circumcision was practised among em, and that they were eaters of human flesh. concerning the latter subject, he should never ave thought of asking them a single question, if hey had not introduced it themselves, by enquirng whether the English had the same custom. t hath been argued, that necessity alone could be the origin of this horrid practice. But as the people of Tanna are possessed of fine pork and lowls, together with an abundance of roots and ruits, the plea of necessity cannot be urged in heir behalf. In fact, no instance was seen of heir eating human flesh; and, therefore, there night, perhaps, be some reason to hesitate, in pronouncing them to be cannibals.

By degrees the inhabitants grew so courteous and civil, as to permit the English gentlemen to ramble about in the skirts of the woods, and to shoot in them, without affording them the east molestation, or shewing any distike. One lay, some boys of the island having gotten beauth thickets, and thrown two or three stones to our people who were cutting wood, they were fired at by the petty officers on duty. Cap-

D 3

V. at the report of the musquets; and, when he was informed of the cause, was much displeased that so wanton an use should be made of our fire-arms. Proper measures were taken by him to

prevent fuch conduct for the future.

In the island of Tanna was a volcano, which fometimes made a dreadful noise, and, at each explosion, which happened every three or four minutes threw up fire and Imoke in prodigious columns. At one time, great stones were seen high in the air. At the foot of the hill were feveral hot springs; and on the side of it Mr. Forster found some places whence smoke of a fulphureous fmell iffued, through cracks or fiffures of the earth. A thermometer, that was placed in a little hole made in one of them; and which in the open air stood only at eighty, rose to a hundred and seventy. In another instance, the mercury rose to a hundred and ninety-one. Our Commander being desirous of getting a near and good view of the volcano; fet out with a party for that purpose. But the gentlemen met with fo many obstructions from the inhabitants, who were jealous of their penetrating far into the country, that they thought proper to return. · For this jealoufy of the islanders Captain Cook, in his narrative, has made a very judicious and candid apology.

It is observable, with respect to the volcano of Tanha, that it is not on the ridge of the hill to which it belongs, but on its side. Nor is that ed

he

ed

e-

to

h

h

ur

us

n

re

r.

a

n

n 1-

r4

F

d

Ó

1

hill the highest in the country; for there are CHAP. others near it of more than double its height. It V. was in moist and wet weather that the volcano 1774. was most violent.

When our Commander was ready to fail from Tanna, an event happened, which gave him much concern. Just as our people were getting some logs into the boat, four or five of the natives stepped forward to see what they were doing. In confequence of the Indians not being allowed to come within certain limits, the centinel ordered them back, upon which they readily complied. At this time, Captain Cook, who had his eyes fixed upon them, observed the centry prefent his piece to the men. The Captain was going to reprove him for this action, when, to his inexpressible astonishment, the centry fired. An attack fo causeless and extraordinary naturally threw the natives into great confusion. Most of them fled, and it was with difficulty that our Commander could prevail upon a few of them to remain. As they ran off, he perceived one of them to fall, who was immediately lifted up by two others, who took him into the water, washed his wound, and then led him off. The wounded person not being carried far, Captain Cook fent for the surgeon of the ship, and accompanied him to the man, whom they found The rascal that had fired pretended that an Indian had laid an arrow across his bow, and was going to shoot at him; so that he apprehended himself to be in danger. This, how-

D 4

V. 1774.

ever, was no more than what the islanders had always done, to shew that they were armed as well as our voyagers. What rendered the present incident the more unfortunate was, that it was not the man who bent the bow, but one who stood near him, that was shot by the centry.

The harbour where the Captain anchored, during his stay at Tanna, was called by him PORT RESOLUTION, after the name of the ship, she being the first vessel by which it was ever entered. It is no more than a little creek, three quarters of a mile in length, and about half that space in breadth*. No place can exceed it in its convenience for taking in wood and water, which are both close to the shore. The inhabitant of the island, with whom our Commander had the most frequent and friendly connexions, was named Paowang.

Very little trade could be carried on with the people of Tanna. They had not the least knowledge of iron; and consequently nails, tools, and other articles made of that metal, and which are so greedily sought for in the more eastern isles, were here of no consideration. Cloth could be of no service to persons who go naked.

b

I

Among the productions of the island, there is reason to believe that the nutmeg-tree might be mentioned. This is collected from the circumstance of Mr. Forster's having shot a pigeon, in

^{*} It is fituated on the north fide of the most eastern point of the island, in the latitude of 19° 32′ 25²/
fouth, and in the longitude of 169° 44′ 35″ east.

d

as

nt

as

0

n

r

e

t

:\$

t

d

S

e

d

8

the craw of which a wild nutmeg was disco- CHAP. vered. However, though he took some pains to V. find the tree, his endeavours were not attended 1774. with success.

It was at first thought by our navigators, that the inhabitants of Tanna were a race between the natives of the Friendly Islands, and those of Mallicollo; but by a short acquaintance with them they were convinced that they had little or no affinity to either, excepting in their hair. Some few men, women, and children were feen, whose hair resembled that of the English. With regard, however, to these persons it was obvious, that they were of another nation; and it was understood that they came from Erronan. Two languages were found to be spoken in Tanna. One of them, which appeared to have been introduced from Erronan, is nearly, if not exactly, the fame with that of the Friendly Islands. The other, which is the proper language of the country, and which is judged to be peculiar to Tanna, Erromango, and Annatom, is different from any that had hitherto been met BERTHE BREET with by our voyagers.

The people of Tanna are of the middle fize, and for the most part slender. There are sew tall or stout men among them. In general, they have good features and agreeable countenances. Like all the tropical race, they are active and nimble; and seem to excel in the use of arms; but not to be fond of labour. With respect to the management of their weapons, Mr. Wales

C H A P. V. 1774-

hath made an observation so honourable to Homer, that were I to omit it, I should not be forgiven by my claffical readers. "I must confess," fays Mr. Wales, "I have often been led to " think the feats which Homer represents his " heroes as performing with their spears, a little too much of the marvellous to be admitted " into an heroic poem; I mean when confined within the strait stays of Aristotle. Nay, even so " great an advocate for him as Mr. Pope, ac-" knowledges them to be furprizing. But fince i I have feen what these people can do with "their wooden spears, and them badly pointed, " and not of a hard nature, I have not the least ex-" ception to any one passage in that great poet a on this account. But if I fee fewer excepti-" ons, I can find infinitely more beauties in him; " as he has, I think, scarcely an action, circum-" stance, or description of any kind whatever, " relating to a spear, which I have not seen and " recognized among these people; as, their " whirling motion, and whistling noise, as they " fly; their quivering motion, as they flick in the ground when they fall; their meditating " their aim, when they are going to throw; and their shaking them in their hand, as they " go along *."

n

h

V

b

f

20 August.

On the twentieth of August Captain Cook failed from Tanna, and employed all the remainder of the month in a farther examination of

^{*} Cook's Voyages, ubi fupra, p. 38 - 84.

e "

0

is

e

d

d

0

-

0

h

t

1774.

the islands around him. He had now finished CHAR his survey of the whole Archipelago, and had gained a knowledge of it infinitely superior to what had ever been attained before. The nor. thern islands of this Archipelago were first difcovered in 1606, by that eminent navigator Quiros, who considered them as part of the fouthern continent, which, at that time, and till very lately, was supposed to exist. M. de Bougainville was the next person by whom they were visited, in 1768. This gentleman, however, besides landing in the Isle of Lepers, only made the discovery that the country was not connected, but composed of islands, which he called the Great Cyclades. Captain Cook, besides ascertaining the situation and extent of these islands, added to them several new ones which had hitherto been unknown, and explored the whole. He thought, therefore, that he had obtained a right to name them; accordingly he bestowed upon them the appellation of the NEW HEBRIDES ! His title to this honour will not

† They are situated between the latitude of 14° 29' and 20° 4' fouth, and between 166° 41' and 170° 21' east longitude, and extend a hundred and twenty-five leagues, in the direction of north-north-west west, and southfouth-east i east. The principal islands of the New Hebrides. for an account of which the reader is referred to Captain Cook's voyage, are, the Peak of the Etoile, Tierra del Espiritu Santo, Mallicollo, St. Bartholomew, the Isle of Lepers, Aurora, Whitfuntide Isle, Ambrym, Paoom, Apee, Three Hills, Sandwich, Erromango, Tanna, Immer, and Annatom,

V. not by so enlightened and liberal a people as the French nation.

The season of the year now rendered it necesfary for our Commander to return to the fouth, while he had yet some time to explore any land he might meet with between the New Hebrides and New Zealand; at which last place he intended to touch, that he might refresh his people, and renew his stock of wood and water for another fouthern course. With this view, he failed on the first of September, and on the fourth land was discovered; in a harbour belonging to which the Resolution came to an anchor the next day. The delign of Captain Cook was not only to visit the country, but to have an opportunity of observing an eclipse of the fun, which was foon to happen. An intercourse immediately commenced with the inhabitants, who, during the whole of the Captain's stay, behaved in a very civil and friendly manner. In return, he was folicitous to render them every fervice in his To Teabooma the Chief, he fent, among other articles, a dog and a bitch, both young, but nearly full grown. It was fome time before Teabooma could believe that the two animals were intended for him; but when he was convinced of it, he was lost in an excess of joy. Another, and still more valuable present, was that of a young boar and fow; which, on account of the absence of the Chief

I. Sept.

ly

as

ef-

h,

nd

es

d-

e,

or

ne

e

g-

le

t

r-

h

y

e

y

S

\$

1

when they were brought to land, were received CHAP.
with great hesitation and ceremony.

V.
The last time that our Commander went on 1774.

The last time that our Commander went on hore at this place, he ordered an inscription to be cut on a large tree, fetting forth the name of the ship, the date, of the year, and other circumstances, which testified that the English were he first discoverers of the country. This he ad before done, wherever fuch a ceremony eemed necessary. How the island was called by he natives, our voyagers could never learn; and, therefore, Captain Cook gave it the name of NEW CALEDONIA. The inhabitants are strong. robust, active, and well made. With regard to the origin of the nation, the Captain judged them to be a race between the people of Tanna and the Friendly Isles; or between those of Tanna and the New Zealanders; or all three. Their language is in some respects a mixture of them all *. In their disposition they are courteous and obliging; and they are not in the least addicted to pilfering, which is more than can be afferted concerning any other nation in this fea.

The women of New Caledonia, and those likewise of Tanna, were found to be much chaster than the semales of the more eastern islands. Our Commander never heard that the

^{*} Mr. Forster is of opinion that the language of the New Caledonians is totally different from that of any other Nation which had yet been seen in the voyage.

13 Sept.

18.

C H A P. least favour was obtained from them by any one V. of his company. Sometimes, indeed, the women would exercise a little coquetry, but they went no farther.

The botanists of the ship did not here complain for want of employment. They were diligent in their researches, and their labours were amply rewarded. Every day brought some accession to botanical knowledge, or that of other branches

of natural history †.

Every thing being ready to put to fea, Captain Cook weighed anchor on the thirteenth of September, with the purpose of examining the coast of New Caledonia. In purfuing this object, by which he was enabled to add greatly to nautical and geographical knowledge, the Resolution was more than once in danger of being toft; and particularly, in the night of the twentyeighth of the month, fhe had a narrow escape. Our navigators, on this occasion, were much alarmed; and day-light shewed that their fears had not been ill founded. Indeed, breakers had been continually under their lee, and at a small distance from them; so that they were in the most imminent danger. "We owed our safety," fays the Captain, " to the interpolition of Pro-" vidence, a good look-out, and the very brisk " manner in which the ship was managed."

Our Commander now began to be tired of a coast which he could no longer explore but at

^{*} Cook, ubi fupra, p. 85 - 127,

ne

en

nt

in

in

y

0

es

n

0 -

ft

y

al

n

;

7-

.

h

S

f

1

e

~

1774

the risque of losing the vessel, and ruining the CHAP. whole voyage. He determined, however, not o leave it, till he knew of what kind fome groves of trees were, which by their uncommon appearance, had occasioned much speculation, and had been mistaken, by several of the gentlemen, for bisaltes. Captain Cook was the more folicitous to ascertain the point, as these trees appeared to be of a fort which might be useful o shipping, and had not been seen any where but in the fouthern parts of New Caledonia, They proved to be a species of spruce pine, very proper for spars, which were then wanted. The discovery was valuable, as, excepting New Zealand, there was not an island known, in the South Pacific Ocean, where a ship could supply herself with a mast or yard, to whatever distress the might be reduced. It was the opinion of the carpenter of the Resolution, who was a mastmaker as well as a shipwright, that very good masts might be made from the trees in question. The wood of them, which is white, closegrained, tough, and light, is well adapted to that purpose. One of the small islands where the trees were found, was called by the Captain the ISLE OF PINES. To another, on account of its affording sufficient employment to the botanists, during the little time they stayed upon it, he gave the name of BOTANY ISLE.

Captain Cook now took into ferious confideration what was farther to be done. He had pretty well determined the extent of the fouth-

V. 1774

CHAP. west coast of New Caledonia, and would gladly have proceeded to a more accurate furvey of the whole, had he not been deterred, not only by the dangers he must encounter, but by the time required for the undertaking, and which he could not possibly spare. Indeed, when he considered the vast ocean he had to explore to the fouth; the state and condition of the ship; the near approach of fummer; and that any material accident might detain him in this fea even for another year, he did not think it adviseable to make New Caledonia any longer the object of his attention. But though he was thus obliged, by necessity, for the first time, to leave a coast which he had discovered, before it was fully furveyed, he did not quit it till he had afcertained the extent of the country, and proved, that, excepting New Zealand, it is perhaps the largest island in the South Pacific Ocean *.

As the Resolution pursued her course from New Caledonia, land was discovered, which, on a nearer approach, was found to be an island of good height and five leagues in circuit. Captain Cook named it NORFOLK ISLE, in honour of the noble family of Howard t. It was uninha-

+ It is fituated in the latitude of 29° 2' 30" fouth, and in the longitude of 168° 16' eaft.

bited

R

^{*} New Caledonia extends from the latitude of 19° 37' to 22° 30' fouth, and from the longitude of 163° 37' to 167° 14' east. It lies nearly north-west ½ west, and fouth-east : east, and is about eighty-feven leagues long in that direction. Its breadth does not any where exceed ten leagues.

bited; and the first persons that ever set foot on CHAP. were unquestionably our English navigators. arious trees and plants were observed that are ommon at New Zealand; and, in particular, he flax plant, which is rather more luxuriant ere than in any part of that country. The chief roduce of the island is a kind of spruce pine, xceedingly strait and tall, which grows in reat abundance. Such is the fize of many of he trees, that, breast high, they are as thick s two men can fathom. Among the vegetables f the place, the palm-cabbage afforded both wholesome and palatable refreshment; and, ndeed, proved the most agreeable repast that our people had for a confiderable time enjoyed. In addition to this gratification, they had the pleasure of procuring some excellent fish.

From Norfolk Isle, our Commander steered or New Zealand, it being his intention to touch at Queen Charlotte's Sound, that he might refresh his crew, and put the ship in a condition to encounter the fouthern latitudes. On the eighteenth of October, he anchored before Ship Cove in that found; and the first thing he did, after landing, was to look for the bottle he had left on the shore, in which was a memorandum. It was taken away; and it soon appeared, from indubitable circumstances, that the Adventure had been in the cove after it was quitted by the

Resolution.

lly

he by

me

ıld ed

h;

ear

CIier

ke

nis

by aft

lly

er-

d,

he

m

on

of

in

of

a-

9.

30

t,

es

re

1,

Upon visiting the gardens which had been formed at Motuara, they were found almost in Vol. II.

1774.

V. 1774.

a state of nature, having been wholly neglected by the inhabitants. Many, however, of the articles were in a flourishing condition, and shewed how well they liked the foil in which they were planted. It was feveral days before any of the natives made their appearance; but when they did fo, and recognifed Captain Cook and his friends, joy succeeded to fear. They hurried in numbers out of the woods, and embraced the English over and over again, leaping and skipping about like madmen. Amidst all this extravagance of joy, they were careful to preserve the honour of their females; for they would not permit some women, who were seen at a distance, to come near our people. The Captain's whole intercourse with the New Zealanders, during this his third visit to Queen Charlotte's Sound, was peaceable and friendly; and one of them, a man apparently of confequence, whose name was Pedero, presented him with a staff of honour, fuch as the Chiefs generally carry. In return, our Commander dreffed Pedero, who had a fine person, and a good presence, in a suit of old clothes, of which he was not a little proud.

hi

pi

tl

C

in

4

fi

C

d

N

fi

tl

bo

tu

Captain Cook still continued his solicitude to stock the island with useful animals; and accordingly, in addition to what he had sormerly done, he ordered two pigs, a boar and sow, to be put on shore. There was reason to believe that some of the cocks and hens which had sormerly been left here still existed. None of them, indeed,

were seen; but an hen's egg was found, which ad not long been laid.

Mr. Wales had now an opportunity of completng his observations with regard to Queen Charotte's Sound, fo as to afcertain its latitude and ongitude with the utmost accuracy *. In the Captain's former voyage there had been an error n this respect. Such were Mr. Wales's abilities nd affiduity, that the same correctness was mainained by him, in determining the fituations of ill the other places which were vifited by our navigators †.

d

e

d

h

c

;

n

г.

5,

1, ft

ıl

y

11

e 1-

n ;

n

.

d d

e

0 -

t e

1

On the tenth of November, Captain Cook took his departure from New Zealand, in farther pursuit of his great object, the determination of the question concerning the existence of a southern continent. Having failed till the twenty-seventh, in different degrees of latitude, extending from 43° to 55° 48' fouth, he gave up all hopes of finding any more land in this ocean +t. He came, therefore, to the resolution of steering directly for the west entrance of the Straights of Magalhaens, with a view of coasting the fouth side of Terra del Fuego, round Cape Horn, to the Straight Le Maire. As the world had hitherto

IC Nov.

1774.

^{*} The longitude of Queen Charlotte's Sound, at the bottom of Ship Cove, is 174° 25' 7!" east, and its latitude 41° 5' 563" fouth.

[†] Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 128-162.

^{††} The ship, on the twenty-seventh was in longitude 138° 56' west;

CHAP. V. 1774.

obtained but a very imperfect knowledge of this shore, the Captain thought that the full survey of it would be more advantageous, both to navigation and geography, than any thing he

could expect to find in a higher latitude.

In the profecution of his voyage, our Commander, on the seventeenth of December, reached the west coast of Terra del Fuego; and having continued to range it till the twentieth, he came to an anchor in a place to which he afterwards gave the name of CHRISTMAS SOUND. Through the whole course of his various navigations, he had never feen so desolate a coast. It feems to be entirely composed of rocky mountains; without the least appearance of vegetation. These mountains terminate in horrible precipices, the craggy fummits of which spire up to a vast height; fo that scarcely any thing in nature can appear with a more barren and favage aspect, than the whole of the country.

The run which Captain Cook had made directly across this ocean, in a high southern latitude. was believed by him to be the first of the kind that had ever been carried into execution *. He was, therefore, fomewhat particular in remarking every circumstance which seemed to be in the least material. However, he could not but observe. that he had never made a passage any where, of fuch length, or even of a much shorter extent,

17 Dec.

^{*} He could not possibly know, at this time, that the Adventure had made the passage before him.

his

rey

to

he

m-

ied

ng

me

ds gh

he

to th-

efe

he

15;

ar

he

li.

le,

nd

Ie

g

ne

e,

of

t,

he

V.

1774.

in which so few things occurred that were of an CHAP. interesting nature. Excepting the variation of the compass, he knew of nothing else that was worthy of notice. The Captain had now done with the Southern Pacific Ocean; and he had explored it in fuch a manner, that it would be impossible for any one to think that more could be performed, n a fingle voyage, towards obtaining that end, han had actually been accomplished to

Barren and dreary as the land is about Christmas Sound, it was not wholly destitute of some accommodations, which could not fail of being agreeable to our navigators. Near every harbour they found fresh water, and wood for fuel. The country abounds likewife with wild fowl, and particularly with geefe; which afforded a refreshment to the whole crew, that was the more acceptable on account of the approaching festival. Had not Providence thus happily provided for them, their Christmas cheer must have been falt beef and pork. Some Madeira wine, the only article of provision that was mended by keeping, was still left. This, in conjunction with the geefe, which were cooked in every variety of method, enabled our people to celebrate Christmas as chearfully, as perhaps was done by their friends in England.

The inhabitants of Terra del Fuego, Captain Cook found to be of the fame nation that he had formerly feen in Success Bay; and the same

Cook, ubi fupra, p. 163 - 176.

CHAP.

1774

whom, M. de Bougainville has distinguished by the name of Pecharas. They are a little, ugly, half-starved, beardless race, and go almost naked. It is their own fault that they are not better clothed, nature having furnished them with ample materials for that purpose. By lining their feal-skin cloaks with the skins and feathers of aquatic birds; by making the cloaks themselves larger; and by applying the fame materials to different parts of clothing, they might render their drefs much more warm and comfortable. But while they are doomed to exist in one of the most inhospitable climates on the globe, they have not fagacity enough to avail themselves of those means of adding to the conveniences of life, which Providence has put into their power. In short, the Captain, after having been a witness to fo many varieties of the human race, hath pronounced, that of all the nations he had feen, the Pecharas are the most wretched *.

Notwithstanding the barrenness of the country, it abounds with a variety of unknown plants, and gave sufficient employment to the botanists of the Resolution. "Almost every plant," says Mr. Forster, "which we gathered" on the rocks, "was new to us, and some species were, remarkable for the beauty of their flowers, or their smell †."

28 Dec.

On the twenty-eighth of December, our Commander sailed from Christmas Sound, and

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 177 - 187.

[†] Forster's Voyage round the World, Vol. II. p. 488.

by

ly,

ed.

ter

ith

eir

of

ves

to

der

le.

he

ey

of

of

er.

efs

th

n,

у,

s,

fts

ys!

he

10

s,

or

proceeded on his voyage, round Cape Horn, through Straight le Maire, to Staten Land. This famous Cape was passed by him on the next day, when he entered the Southern Atlantic Ocean. In some charts, Cape Horn is laid down as belonging to a small island; but this was neither confirmed, nor could it be contradicted by our navigators, for several breakers appeared on the coast, both to the east and west of it, and the hazy weather rendered every object indistinct. Though the summits of some of the hills were rocky, the sides and valleys seemed covered with a green turf, and wooded in tusts †.

In ranging Staten Island a good port was found fituated three leagues to the westward of St. John, and in a northern direction. Upon account of the day on which the discovery of this port was made, (being the first of January) Captain Cook gave it the name of NEW YEAR'S HARBOUR. The knowledge of it may be of fervice to future navigators. Indeed, it would be more convenient for ships bound to the west, or round Cape Horn, if its fituation would permit them to put to fea with an easterly and northerly wind. But this inconvenience is not of great consequence, since these winds are seldom known to be of long duration. The Captain, however, has declared, that if he were on a voyage round Cape Horn to the west, and not

C H A P. V. 1774.

1775.

1 January.

[†] The latitude of Cape Horn is 55° 58' fouth, and its longitude was now afcertained to be 67° 46' west.

V. 1775.

in want of wood or water, or any other thing which might make it necessary to put into port, he would not approach the land at all. By keeping out at sea the currents would be avoided, which, he was satisfied, would lose their force at ten or twelve leagues from land, and be totally without influence at a greater distance.

The extent of Terra del Fuego, and confequently that of the Straights of Magalhaens, our Commander ascertained to be less than has been laid down by the generality of navigators. Nor was the coast, upon the whole, found to be so dangerous as has often been represented. The weather, at the same time, was remarkably

temperate.

In one of the little isles near Staten Land, and which had been called by Captain Cook New Year's Isles, there was observed a harmony between the different animals of the place, which is too curious to be omitted. It seemed as if they had entered into a league not to disturb each other's tranquillity. The greater part of the fea - coast is occupied by the fea - hons; the fea-bears take up their abode in the ifle; the shags are posted in the highest cliffs; the penguins fix their quarters where there is the most easy communication to and from the fea; and the rest of the birds chuse more retired places. All these animals were occasionally seen to mix together, like domestic cattle and poultry in a farm-yard, without one attempting to molest the other. Nay, the Captain had often observed

ng

rt, By

ed,

ce

be

fe-

ur

en or

fo

ne

y

d

W

y

h

y h

ie

e

e

e

e

d

n

V

the eagles and vultures fitting on the hills among he shags, while none of the latter, whether old or young, appeared to be in the least disturbed at their presence. It may be asked, then, how do these birds of prey live? This question our Commander hath answered, by supposing that they feed on the carcases of seals and birds which lie by various causes. It is probable, from the mmenfe quantity of animals with which the fle abounds, that fuch carcafes exist in great numbers *.

From Staten Island Captain Cook failed, on the fourth of January, with a view, in the first 4 January. place, of discovering that extensive coast, laid down by Mr. Dalrymple in his chart, in which is the gulph of St. Sebastian. In order to have all other parts before him, the Captain designed to make the western point of that gulph. As he had fome doubt of the existence of such a coast, this appeared to him the best route for determining the matter, and for exploring the fouthern part of this ocean. When he came to the situations assigned to the different points of the gulph of St. Sebastian, neither land nor any unequivocal figns of land were discovered. On the contrary, it was evident that there could not be any extensive tract of country in the direction which had been supposed.

Proceeding in his voyage, land was feen on the fourteenth, which was at first mistaken for

V. 1775.

Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 187 - 206.

C H A P. V.

an island of ice. It was in a manner wholly covered with fnow. From the person by whom it was first discovered, it obtained the name of WILLIS'S ISLAND †. It is a high rock, of no great extent, near to which are some rocky islots. Another island, of a larger compass, on account of the vast number of birds which were upon it, was called BIRD ISLE. A more extenfive range of country had been feen for fome time, which Captain Cook reached on the feventeenth, and where he landed, on the fame day, in three different places. The head of the bay, in which he came to shore, was terminated by particular ice-cliffs, of confiderable height. Pieces were continually breaking off, and floating out to fea; and while our navigators were in the bay, a great fall happened, which made a noise like a cannon. No less savage and horrible were the inner parts of the country. " The wild rocks " raifed their fummits, till they were loft in the " clouds, and the valleys lay covered with " everlasting snow." There was not a tree to be seen, or a shrub found that was even big enough to make a tooth-pick. The only vegetation that was met with, was a coarse strongbladed grafs, growing in tufts, wild burnet, and a plant like moss, which sprang from the rocks.

When our Commander landed in the bay, he displayed the English colours; and, under a

[†] It is situated in the latitude of 54° fouth, and the longitude of 38° 23' west.

olly

om

of

no

ky

on

ere en-

me

en-

ıy,

by

ces

he

ife

ere

ks he

ith to

rig

ta-

g.

t,

he

he

a

he

CHAP.

V.

1775.

discharge of small arms, took possession of the country in his Majesty's name. It was not, however, a discovery which was ever likely to be productive of any confiderable benefit. In his return to the ship, Captain Cook brought with him a quantity of feals and penguins, which were an acceptable present to the crew; not from the want of provisions, which were plentiful in every kind, but from a change of diet. Any fort of fresh meat was preferred by most on board to falt. The Captain himself was now, for the first time, tired of the salted meats of the ship; and though the flesh of the penguins could fearcely vie with bullock's liver, its freshness was sufficient to render it comparatively agreeable to the palate. To the bay in which he had been, he gave the name of Possession BAY *.

The land in which this bay lies, was at first judged by our navigators to be part of a great continent. But, upon coasting round the whole country, it was proved to a demonstration that it was only an island of seventy leagues in circuit. In honour of his Majesty, Captain Cook called it the ISLE OF GEORGIA †. It could scarcely have been thought that an island of no greater extent than this, situated between the latitude

* It is fituated in the latitude of 54° 5' fouth, and in longitude of 37° 18' west.

[†] It is fituated between the latitudes of 53° 57' and 54° 57' fouth; and between 38° 13' and 35° 34' west longitude.

V.

of fifty-four and fifty-five, should, in a manner, be wholly covered, many fathoms deep, with frozen fnow, in the height of fummer. The fides and fummits of the lofty mountains were cased with fnow and ice; and an incredible quantity lay in the valleys. So immense was the quantity, that our Commander did not think that it could be the produce of the island. Some land, therefore, which he had feen at a distance, induced him to believe that it might belong to an extenfive tract; and gave him hopes of discovering a continent. In this respect, however, he was disappointed; but the disappointment did not sit heavy upon him; fince to judge of the bulk by the apprehended fample, it would not have been worth the discovery. It was remarkable that our voyagers did not fee a river, or a stream of fresh water, on the whole coast of the lsle of Georgia. Captain Cook judged it to be highly probable that there are no perennial springs in the country; and that the interior parts, in consequence of their being much elevated, never enjoy heat enough to melt the fnow in fufficient quantities to produce a river or stream of water. In failing round the island, our navigators were almost continually involved in a thick mist; so that, for any thing they knew to the contrary, they might be furrounded with dangerous rocks.

25 January.

The Captain, on the twenty-fifth of the month, steered from the Isle of Georgia, and, on the twenty-feventh, computed that he was in latitude sixty, south. Farther than this he did not intend

0

er,

th

les

ed

ty

у,

ld

re-

ed

n-

a

as fit

y

en

at

of

of

ly

ıñ

n-

er

nt

r.

re

o

,

S.

h, e

e

d

o go, unless some certain signs of soon meeting CHAP. ith land should be discovered. There was now long hollow swell from the west, which was a trong indication that no land was to be met with in that direction; and hence arose an dditional proof of what has already been remarkd, that the extensive coast, laid down in Mr. Dalrymple's chart of the ocean between Africa nd America, and the Gulph of St. Sebastian oth not exist. Not to mention the various lands which were feen in the profecution of he voyage, and the names that were given to hem, I shall only advert to a few of the more naterial circumstances. On an elevated coast, which appeared in fight upon the thirty-first, 31 January. our Commander bestowed the appellation of the SOUTHERN THULE. The reason of his giving t this name was, that it is the most fouthern and that had ever yet been discovered *. It is every where covered with fnow, and displays furface of vast height. On this day, our voyagers were in no fmall danger from a great westerly swell, which set right upon the shore, and threatened to carry them on the most horrible coast in the world. Happily, the discovery of a point to the north, beyond which no land could be feen, relieved them from their apprehensions. To the more distinguished tracts of country, which were discovered from the

1775.

^{*} Its latitude is 59° 13' 30" fouth; and its longitude 7 45' west.

V. 1775. 31. Jan. to 6 Feb.

CHAP. thirty-first of January to the fixth of February, Captain Cook gave the names of CAPE BRISTOL, CAPE MONTAGU, SAUNDERS'S ISLE, CANDLEMAS ISLES, and SANDWICH'S LAND. The last is either a group of islands, or else a point of the continent. For that there is a tract of land near the pole, which is the fource of most of the ice that is spread over this vast Southern Ocean, was the Captain's firm opinion. He also thought it probable, that this land must extend farthest to the north where it is opposite to the Southern Atlantic and Indian Oceans. Ice had always been found by him farther to the north in these oceans than any where elfe, and this he judged could not be the case, if there were not land of confiderable extent to the fouth. However, the greatest part of this fouthern continent, if it actually exists, must lie within the polar circle, where the fea is so encumbered with ice, that the land is rendered inaccessible. So great is the risque which is run, in examining a coast in these unknown and icy seas, that our Commander, with a modest and well-grounded boldness, could affert, that no man would ever venture farther than he had done; and that the lands which may lie to the fouth will never be explored. Thick fogs, fnow storms, intense cold, and every thing beside that can render navigation dangerous, must be encountered; all which difficulties are greatly heightened by the inexpresfibly horrid aspect of the country. It is a country doomed by nature never once to feel the warmth

r l

u

hi

Mi

the fun's rays, but to lie buried in everlasting CHAP. ow and ice. Whatever ports there may be the coast, they are almost entirely covered ith frozen fnow of a vast thickness. If, howver, any one of them should be so far open as invite a ship into it, she would run the risque being fixed there for ever, or of coming out an ice island. To this it may be added, that e islands and floats on the coast, the great falls om the ice cliffs in the port, or a heavy fnow orm, attended with a sharp frost, might be

qually fatal.

,

L,

S

er

ti-

ne

at

as

it

to

rn

en

ns

ld

n-

he

it

e,

at

he

in

d-

ſs,

re

ds

X-

d,

ra-

ch

ef-

ry th

Nothing could exceed the inclination of Capin Cook, if it had been practicable, to penetrate irther to the fouth: but difficulties like these ere not to be furmounted. If he had risqued Il that had been done during the voyage, for he fake of discovering and exploring a coast, thich, when discovered and explored, would have answered no end whatever, or have been of the least use either to navigation or geography, r indeed to any other science, he would justly ave been charged with inexcusable temerity. He etermined, therefore, to alter his course to the ast, and to fail in quest of Bouvet's Land, the xistence of which was yet to be settled. Accordngly, this was the principal object of his jursuit, from the fixth to the twenty-second of he month. By that day he had run down hirteen degrees of longitude, in the very latitude fligned for Bouvet's Land. No fuch land,

6 Jan. to

C H A I V.

however, was discovered; nor did any proofs occur of the existence of Cape Circumcision. Our Commander was at this time no more than two degrees of longitude from the route he had taken to the fouth, when he left the Cape of Good Hope. It would, therefore, have been to no purpose to proceed any farther to the east in this parallel. But being desirous of determining the question concerning some land that was supposed to have been seen more to the south, he directed his course for the situation in which the discovery of it might be expected. Two days were spent by him in this pursuit, to no effectual purpose. After having run over the place where the land was imagined to lie, without meeting with the least figns of any, it became certain that the ice islands had deceived our navigators as well as Mr. Bouvet *.

Captain Cook had now made the circuit of the fouthern ocean in a high latitude, and traversed it in such a manner as to leave not the least room for the possibility of there being a continent, unless near the pole, and out of the reach of navigation. By twice visiting the tropical sea, he had not only settled the situation of some old discoveries, but made many new ones; and, indeed, even in that part, had lest little more to be accomplished. The intention of the voyage had, in every respect, been fully answered, and the southern hemisphere sufficiently explored. A

f

id

er

ef

ch

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 207-238.

mal end was hereby put to the fearthing after CHAPL fouthern continent, which, for nearly two nturies past, had occasionally engrossed the tention of fome of the maritime powers, and ad been urged with great ardour by philo-

phers and geographers in different ages.

ofs

n.

an

ad

of

en

aft

18

p-

he

he

ys

C-

ce

ut

ne

ır

of

a-

ie

a

e

1

e

e

e

The great purpose of his navigation round the obe being thus completed, the Captain began direct his views towards England. He had, deed, fome thoughts of protracting his course little longer, for the fake of revisiting the place there the French discovery is said to be situated. lut, upon mature deliberation, he determined lay aside his intention. He considered that, this discovery had really been made, the end yould be as fully answered as if it had been one by himself. It could only be an island; and a judgment might be formed from the degree f cold which our voyagers had experienced in hat latitude, it could not be a fertile one. Beides, our Commander would hereby have been kept two months longer at fea, and that in a tempestuous latitude, with which the ship was not in a condition to struggle. Her fails and ligging were fo much worn, that fomething was giving way every hour; and there was nothing left, either to repair or to replace them. The provisions of the vessel were in such a state of decay, that they afforded little nourishment, and the company had been long without refreshments. indeed, the crew were yet healthy, and would chearfully have gone wherever the Captain judged VOL. II.

V. 17790 1775.

CHAP. it proper to lead them; but he was fearful lest the fcurvy should lay hold of them, at a time when none of the remedies were left by which it could be removed. He thought, likewise, that it would have been cruel in him to have continued the fatigues and hardships they were perpetually exposed to, longer than was absolutely necessary. Throughout the whole voyage, they had merited by their behaviour every indulgence which it was in his power to bestow. Animated by the conduct of the officers, they had shewn that no difficulties or dangers which came in their way were incapable of being furmounted; nor had their activity, courage, and chearfulness been in the least abated by the separation from them of their confort the Adventure.

From all these considerations, which were evidently the dictates of wisdom and humanity, Captain Cook was induced to fpend no longer time in fearthing for the French discoveries, and to steer for the Cape of Good Hope. He determined, however, to direct his course in fuch a manner as to look for the Isles of Denia and Marseveen, which are laid down in Dr. Halley's variation chart *. After failing in the proper latitudes, from the twenty-fifth of February to the thirteenth of March, no fuch islands were discovered. Nothing, indeed, had been

25 Feb. 13 March.

^{*} They are laid down in the latitude of 41° 1/2 fouth, and about 4° of longitude to the east of the meridian of the Cape of Good Hope,

left

me

ich

ife,

ave

ere

ofo.

ge,

in-

w.

ney

ich

ur-

ind

pa-

re.

ere

ty,

ger

es,

He

in

nia

Dr.

he

ru-

ds

en

h, of V.

1775.

en that could encourage our voyagers to per- C H A P. vere in a fearch after them; and much time buld not now be spared, either for the purpose f finding them, or of proving their non-existence. very one on board was for good reasons imatient to get into port. The Captain, therefore, ould no longer avoid yielding to the general wishes, and resolving to proceed to the Cape, without farther delay †.

Soon after our Commander had come to this etermination, he demanded of the officers and etty officers, in pursuance of his instructions, he log-books and journals they had kept; which were delivered to him accordingly, and ealed up for the inspection of the Admiralty, He enjoined them also, and the whole crew, lot to divulge where they had been, till they vere permitted to do fo by their lordships; an njunction, a compliance with which might probably be rendered somewhat difficult, from the natural tendency there is in men to relate the extraordinary enterprizes and adventures wherein hey have been concerned.

As the Resolution approached towards the Cape of Good Hope, she fell in first with a Dutch East Indiaman from Bengal, commanded by Captain Bosch, and next with an English ndiaman, being the True Briton, from China, of which Captain Broadly was the commander.

[†] He was at this time in the latitude of 38° 38' fouth, nd the longitude of 23° 37' east.

V. 1775.

Mr. Bosch very obligingly offered to our navigators sugar, arrack, and whatever he had to spare; and Captain Broadly, with the most ready generosity, sent them fresh provisions, tea, and various articles which could not fail of being peculiarly acceptable to people in their situation. Even a parcel of old news-papers surnished no slight gratification to persons who had so long been deprived of obtaining any intelligence concerning their country and the state of Europe. From these vessels Captain Cook received some information with regard to what had happened to the Adventure, after her separation from the Resolution.

22 March.

On Wednesday the twenty-second of March*, he anchored in Table Bay; where he found several Dutch ships, some French, and the Ceres, an English East Indiaman, bound directly for England, under the command of Captain Newte. By this gentleman he sent a copy of the preceding part of his journal, some charts, and other drawings, to the Admiralty †.

During the circum-navigation of the globe, from the period of our Commander's leaving the Cape of Good Hope to his return to it again, he had failed no less than twenty thousand leagues. This was an extent of voyage nearly equal to three times the equatorial circumference

† Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 239 - 249.

^{*} With our navigators, who had failed round the world, it was Wednesday the twenty-second of March; but at the Cape of Good Hope it was Tuesday the twenty-first.

VI-

to

oft

S, ail

eir

ur-

ad

lli.

of

iv-

ad

on

*,

nd

es,

for

te. re-

nd

e,

he

n,

nd rly

1ce

1d,

at

of the earth, and which had never been accom- CHAP. plished before, by any ship, in the same compass of duration. In fuch a case, it could not be a matter of furprise, that the rigging and fails of the Resolution should be essentially damaged, and even worn out: and yet, in all this great run, which had been made in every latitude between nine and feventy-one, she did not spring either low-mast, top-mast, lower or top-sail yard; nor did she so much as break a lower or top-mast fhroud. These happy circumstances were owing to the good properties of the vessel, and the fingular care and abilities of her officers *.

On the remainder of the voyage it is not neceffary to enlarge. Though it was conducted with the fame attention to navigation and geography, and with the fame fagacity in marking whatever was worthy of observation, nevertheless, as it was not employed in traverfing unknown feas, or in discovering countries that had not been heard of before, it may be fufficient briefly to mention the places at which Captain Cook touched, before his arrival in England. The repairs of the ship having been completed, and the neceffary stores gotten on board, together with a fresh supply of provisions and water, he left the Cape of Good Hope on the twenty-seventh of April, and reached the Island of St. Helena on the fifteenth of May. Here he staid till the twenty-first, when he failed for the Island of

1775.

27 April.

5 May.

SI.

Voyage, ubi supra, p. 265, 266.

V. eighth. From this place he directed his course, on the thirty-first, for the Island of Fernando de Noronha, at which he arrived on the ninth of June.

In the progress of the voyage, our Commander made an experiment upon the still for procuring fresh water; and the result of the trial was, that the invention is useful upon the whole, but that to trust entirely to it would by no means be advisable. Indeed, provided there is not a scarcity of suel, and the coppers are good, as much water may be obtained as will support life, but no efforts will be able to procure a quantity sufficient for the preservation of health, especially in hot climates. Captain Cook was convinced, by experience, that nothing contributes more to the health of seamen, than having plenty of water.

1

t

f

in July.

On the fourteenth of July, the Captain came to an anchor in the Bay of Fayal, one of the Azores Islands. His fole design in stopping here, was to give Mr. Wales an opportunity of finding the rate of the watch, that hereby he might be enabled to fix the longitude of these islands with the greater degree of certainty. No sooner, therefore, had our Commander anchored, than he sent an officer to wait on the English conful, and to acquaint the governor with the arrival of our navigators, requesting his permission for Mr Wales to make observations on shore, for the purpose now mentioned. Mr. Dent, who then

1775.

19 July.

30.

acted as conful, not only obtained this permission, C HAP. but accommodated Mr. Wales with a convenient place in his garden, to fet up his instruments.

This object being accomplished, Captain Cook proceeded, on the nineteenth, with all expedition for England. On the thirtieth of the same month, he anchored at Spithead, and landed at Portfmouth, having been absent from Great Britain three years and eighteen days, in which time, and under all changes of climate, he had loft but four men, and only one of them by fickness*.

* Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 268-289.

ty-

ſe,

de

of

der

ing

hat

hat

be

ity ich

out ity lly ed, ore of

me the re, ndht nds er, an ul, of VIr he en

CHAPTER THE SIXTH.

The History of Captain Cook's Life, from the Conclusion of his second Voyage round the World, to the Commencement of his Voyage to the Pacific Ocean.

C H A P. VI. 1775.

1 HE able manner in which Captain Cook had conducted the preceding voyage, the discoveries he had made, and his complete determination of the grand point he had been fent to afcertain, justly and powerfully recommended him to the protection and encouragement of all those who had patronized the undertaking. No alteration had occurred, during his absence, in the Presidency of the Admiralty department. The noble Lord, whose extensive views had taken such a lead in the plans of navigation and discovery, still continued at the head of that board; and it could not be otherwise than a high satisfaction to him that so extraordinary a degree of success had attended his defigns for the enlargement of fcience His lordship lost no time in representing Captain Cook's merits to the King: nor did his Majesty stand in need of solicitations to shew favour to a man who had so eminently fulfilled his royal and munificent intentions. Accordingly, our navigator, on the ninth of August, was raised to the rank of a Post Captain. Three days afterwards, he received a more diftinguished and substantial

9 August.

mark of the approbation of Government; for he C was then appointed a Captain in Greenwich Hospital; a situation which was intended to afford him a pleasing and honourable reward for his illustrious labours and services *.

ufi-

the

an.

ad

ies of

n, he

ho

on fi-

ole

a

7,

it

to

ad

8

in

y

id t-

e

al

It will easily be supposed that the lovers of science would, in general, be peculiarly attentive to the effects resulting from Captain Cook's difcoveries. The additions he had made to the knowledge of geography, navigation, and aftronomy, and the new views he had opened of the diversified state of human life and manners, could not avoid commanding their esteem, and exciting their admiration. With many persons of philofophic literature he was in the habits of intimacy and friendship; and he was particularly acquainted with Sir John Pringle, at that time President of the Royal Society. It was natural, therefore, that his scientific friends should wish him to become a member of this learned body; the confequence of which was, that, in the latter end of the year 1775, he was proposed as a candidate for election. On the twenty-ninth of February, 1776, he was unanimously chosen; and he was admitted on the feventh of March +. That same evening, a paper was read, which he had addressed to Sir John Pringle, containing an account of the method he had taken to preferve the health

C H A P. Vl. 1776.

1776. 29 Feb.

7 March.

^{*} From the books of the Admiralty.

[†] From the register of the Royal Society, and the information of Mr. Planta.

Holland +.

VI. during her voyage round the world *. Another paper, at the request of the President, was communicated by him, on the eighteenth of April, relative to the tides in the South Seas. The tides particularly considered were those in the Endeavour River, on the east coast of New

A still greater honour was in reserve for Captain Cook than the election of him to be a common member of the Royal Society. It was refolved by Sir John Pringle, and the Council of the Society, to bestow upon him the estimable prize of the gold medal, for the best experimental paper of the year; and no determination could be founded in greater wisdom and justice. If Captain Cook had made no important discoveries, if he had not determined the question concerning a fouthern continent, his name would have been entitled to immortality, on account of his humane attention to, and his unparalleled fuccess in preferving the lives and health of his feamen. He had good reason, upon this head, to assume the pleasurable, but modest language, with which he has concluded his narrative of his fecond navigation round the globe: "Whatever," fays he, " may be the public judgment about other mat-" ters, it is with real fatisfaction, and without " claiming any merit but that of attention to

^{*} Philosophical Transactions, vol. lxvi. p. 402. - 406.

[†] Ibid. p. 447 — 449.

"my duty, that I can conclude this account Chap.
with an observation, which facts enable me to VI.
make, that our having discovered the possibility of preserving health among a numerous ship's company, for such a length of time, in such varieties of climate, and amidst such continued hardships and fatigues, will make this voyage remarkable, in the opinion of every benevolent person, when the disputes about the Southern Continent shall have ceased to engage the attention, and to divide the

" judgment of philosophers *."

n,

10-

of

as.

in

ewº

p-

a

ras

cil

ole

tal

ld

If

es,

ng

en

ne

e-

Te-

ne

ne

a-

t-

ıt

0

It was the custom of Sir John Pringle, at the delivery of Sir Godfrey Copley's annual medal, to give an elaborate discourse, containing the history of that part of science for the improvement of which the medal was conferred. Upon the present occasion, the President had a subject to enlarge upon, which was perfectly congenial to his disposition and studies. His own life had been much employed in pointing out the means which tended not only to cure, but to prevent, the difeases of mankind; and, therefore, it was with peculiar pleasure and affection that he celebrated the conduct of his friend, who, by precautions equally wife and fimple, had rendered the circum-navigation of the globe, fo far as health is concerned, quite a harmless undertaking the Towards the beginning of his discourse,

* Cook's fecond voyage, vol. ii. p. 293.

[†] Life of Sir John Pringle, prefixed to his Six Dictourses, p. xlii. xliii.

VI.

C HAP.

Sir John justly asks, " What enquiry can be fo " uleful as that, which hath for its object the " faving the lives of men? and when shall we " find one more successful than that before us? "Here, " adds the President, " are no vain " boastings of the empiric, nor ingenious and " delusive theories of the dogmatist; but a con-" cife and artlefs, and an incontested relation of " the means, by which, under Divine favour, " Captain Cook, with a company of a hundred " and eighteen men, performed a voyage of " three years and eighteen days, throughout all " the climates, from fifty-two degrees north to " feventy-one degrees fouth, with the loss of " only one man by fickness +. - I would now " enquire, " proceeds Sir John Pringle, " of the " most conversant in the study of bills of morta-" lity, whether, in the most healthful climate, " and in the best condition of life, they have " ever found so small a number of deaths, within " that space of time? How great and agreeable * then must our surprize be, after perusing the " histories of long navigations in former days, " when fo many perished by marine diseases, " to find the air of the fea acquitted of all ma-" lignity, and, in fine, that a voyage round the

I

1

† Mr. Patten, furgeon to the Resolution, informed Sir John Pringle, that this one man, who died of a confumption terminating in a dropsy, began so early to complain of a cough and other consumptive symptoms, which had never lest him, that his lungs must have been affected before he came on board.

fo

the

we

us?

rain

and

on-

of

ur,

red

of

all

to

of

WO

the

ta-

te,

ve

nic

ole

he

rs,

es,

he

ir

n-

n-

d

" world may be undertaken with less danger, CHAP.
" perhaps, to health, than a common tour in VI.
" Europe!"

In the progress of his discourse, the President recounted the dreadful calamities and destruction the fcurvy had heretofore brought upon mariners in voyages of great length; after which he pointed out at large, and illustrated with his own observations, the methods pursued by Captain Cook for preferving the health of his men. In conclusion, Sir John remarked, that the Royal Society never more cordially or more meritoriously bestowed the gold metal, that faithful fymbol of their esteem and affection. " For if," fays he, "Rome decreed the civic crown to him " who faved the life of a fingle citizen, what " wreaths are due to that man, who having " himself saved many, perpetuates in your Trans-" actions the means by which Britain may now, " on the most distant voyages, preserve numbers " of her intrepid sons, her mariners; who, brav-" ing every danger, have so liberally contributed " to the fame, to the opulence, and to the " maritime empire, of their country! *"

^{*} Sir John Pringle's Six Discourses, p. 145 — 147, 199.—It cannot but be acceptable to insert here, from the conclusion of Captain Cook's second voyage, his enumeration of the several causes, to which, under the care of Providence, the uncommon good state of health, experienced by his people, was owing. "in the introduction," "fays he, "mention has been made of the extraordinary attention paid by the admiralty, in causing

CHAP. One circumstance alone was wanting to com-VI. . plete the pleasure and celebrity arising from the

1776.

"fuch articles to be put on board, as either from expe"rience or fuggestion it was judged would tend to preserve
"the health of the seamen. I shall not trespass upon the
"reader's time in mentioning them all, but confine myself
to such as were found the most useful.

"We were furnished with a quantity of malt, of which was made Sweet wort. To such of the men as shewed the least symptoms of the scurvy; and also to such as were thought to be threatened with that disorder, this was given, from one to two or three pints a day each man; or in such proportion as the surgeon found necessary, which sometimes amounted to three quarts, This is, without doubt, one of the best antiscorbutic sea-medicines yet discovered; and, if used in time, will, with proper attention to other things, I am persuaded, prevent the scurvy from making any progress for a considerable while. But I am not altogether of opinion that it will cure it at sea,

60

66

56

66

66

66

56

56

66

..

"Sour Krout, of which we had a large quantity, is "not only a wholesome vegetable food, but, in my judgment, highly antiscorbutic; and it spoils not by keeping. A pound of this was served to each man, when at sea, twice a week, or oftener, as was thought

" necessary.

"Portable Broth was another great article, of which we had a large fupply. An ounce of this to each man, or fuch other proportion as circumstances pointed out, was boiled in their peafe, three days in the week; and when we were in places where vegetables were to be got, it was boiled with them, and wheat or oatmeal, every morning for breakfast; and also with pease and vegetables for dinner. It enabled us to make several nourishing and wholesome messes, and was the means of making the people eat a greater quantity of vegetables than they would otherwise have done.

affignment of Sir Godfrey Copley's médal. Cap- CHAP. tain Cook was not himself present, to hear the VI.

"Rob of Lemon and Orange, is an antifcorbutic we were not without. The furgeon made use of it in many cases, with great success.

e

e

0

e

f

"Amongst the articles of victualling, we were supplied with Sugar in the room of Oil, and with Wheat for a part of our Oatmeal; and were certainly gainers by the exchange. Sugar, I apprehend, is a very good antiscorbutic; whereas oil (such as the navy is usually supplied with), I am of opinion has the contrary effect.

"But the introduction of the most falutary articles, either as provisions or medicines, will generally prove unsuccessful, unless supported by certain regulations. On this principle, many years experience, together with some hints I had from Sir Hugh Palliser, Captains Campbell, Wallis, and other intelligent officers, enabled me to lay a plan whereby all was to be governed.

"The crew were at three watches, except upon some extraordinary occasions. By this means they were not so much exposed to the weather as if they had been at watch and watch; and had generally dry cloaths to shift themselves, when they happened to get wet. Care was also taken to expose them as little to wet weather as possible.

"Proper methods were used to keep their persons hammocks, bedding, cloaths, &c. constantly clean and dry. Equal care was taken to keep the ship clean and dry betwixt decks. Once or twice a week she was aired with sires; and when this could not be done, she was smoked with sunpowder, mixed with vinegar or water. I had also, frequently, a fire made in an iron pot, at the bottom of the well, which was of great use in purifying the air in the lower parts of the ship. To this, and to cleanlines, as well in the ship as amongst the

discourse of the President, and to receive the honour conferred upon him. Some months before VI.

1776.

" people, too great attention cannot be paid: the least " neglect occasions a putrid and disagreeable smell below, " which nothing but fires will remove.

"Proper attention was paid to the ship's coppers, so

" that they were kept constantly clean.

"The fat, which boiled out of the falt beef and " pork, I never suffered to be given to the people; being

" of opinion that it promotes the fcurvy.

"I was careful to take in water wherever it was to " be got, even though we did not want it. Because I " look upon fresh water from the shore, to be more " wholesome than that which has been kept some time " on board a ship. Of this essential article we were never " at an allowance, but had always plenty for every neceffary purpose. Navigators in general cannot, indeed, " expect, nor would they wish to meet with such advan-" tages in this respect, as fell to my lot. The nature of " our voyage carried us into very high latitudes. But the " hardships and dangers inseparable from that situation, " were in some degree compensated by the singular feli-" city we enjoyed, of extracting inexhaustible supplies of " fresh water from an ocean strewed with ice.

"We came to few places, where either the art of " man, or the bounty of nature, had not provided fome "fort of refreshment or other, either in the animal or " vegetable way. It was my first care to procure whatever " of any kind could be met with, by every means in my " power; and to oblige our people to make use thereof, " both by my example and authority; but the benefits arti-" fing from refreshments of any kind foon rebecame fo " obvious, that I had little occasion to recommend the

" one, or to exert the other *."

In a letter which Captain Cook wrote to Sir John Pringle, just before he embarked on his last voyage, dated Plymouth

^{*} Vol. ii. p. 289 -- 292.

the ore

least

ow,

fo

and

eing

to

e I

ore ime

ver

cef-

ed,

an-

of the

on,

eli-

of

of

me

10

ver

my

rtifo

he

ith

the anniversary of St. Andrew's day, he had GHAP. failed on his last expedition. The medal, therefore, was delivered into the hands of Mrs. Cook, whose satisfaction at being entrusted with so valuable a pledge of her hulband's reputation cannot be questioned. Neither can it be doubted, but that the Captain, before his departure from England, was fully apprized of the mark of distinction which was intended for him by the Royal Society.

Captain Cook, after the conclusion of his fecond voyage, was called upon to appear in the world in the character of an author. In the account that was published, by authority, of his former circum-navigation of the globe, as well as of those which had been performed by the Captains Byron, Carteret, and Wallis, it was thought requisite to procure the assistance of a professed literary man, whose business it should be to draw up a narrative from the several journals of these

Sound, July 7, 1776, he expressed himself as follows: "I entirely agree with you, that the dearness of the rob of lemons and of oranges will hinder them from being " furnished in large quantities. But I do not think this " fo necessary; for, though they may affift other things, " I have no great opinion of them alone. Nor have I a higher opinion of vinegar. My people had it very sparingly du-" ring the late voyage, and, towards the latter part, none at all; and yet we experienced no ill effect from the " want of it. The custom of washing the inside of the ship " with vinegar, I seldom observed; thinking that fire and " finoke answered the purpose much better *."

 \mathbf{G}

VI. 1776.

^{*} Sir John Pringle's Six Discourses, p. 200. VOL. II.

C H A I VI. 1776. Commanders. Accordingly, Dr. Hawkesworth, as is univerfally known, was employed for the purpose. In the present case, it was not esteemed necessary to have recourse to such an expedient. Captain Cook was justly regarded as fufficiently qualified to relate his own ftory. His journal only required to be divided into chapters, and perhaps to be amended by a few verbal corrections. It is not speaking extravagantly to fay, that, in point of composition, his hiltory of his voyage reflects upon him no small degree of credit. His style is natural, clear, and manly; being well adapted to the subject and to his own character: and it is possible that a pen of more studied elegance would not have given any additional advantage to the narration. was not till some time after Captain Cook's leaving England that the work was published; but, in the mean while, the superintendence of it was undertaken by his learned and valuable friend, Dr. Douglas, whose late promotion to the mitre hath afforded pleasure to every literary man, of every denomination. When the Voyage appeared, it came recommended by the accuracy and excellence of its charts, and by a great variety of engravings, from the curious and beautiful drawings of Mr. Hodges. This work was followed by the publication of the original astronomical observations, which had been made by Mr. Wales in the Refolution, and by Mr. Bayley in the Adventure. It was at the expence of the Commissioners of Longitude that these observati-

ı

1,

1e

n-

e.

as

y.

0

W

a-

is

ill

0

n

It

V-

t,

it le

ce

y

y

11

r.

ons were made, and it was by their order that CHAP. they were printed. The book of Mr Wales VI. and Mr. Bayley displays, in the strongest light, the 1776. scientific use and value of Captain Cook's voyage *.

Some of the circumstances which have now been mentioned, have designedly been brought forward more early in point of time than should otherwise have been done, in order to prevent any interruption in the course of the subsequent narrative.

Though Captain Cook was expected to fit down in repose, after his toils and labours, the design of farther discoveries was not laid aside. The illusion, indeed, of a terra Australis incognita, to any purposes of commerce, colonization, and utility, had been dispelled: but there was another grand question which remained to be determined; and that was the practicability of a northern passage to the Pacisic Ocean.

* Beside the works which came from authority, Mr. George Forster published, in two volumes, quarto, "A "Voyage round the World, in his Britannic Majesty's "floop, Resolution." This appeared in 1777. The next year, Dr. John Reinhold Forster communicated to the public, in one volume, quarto, "Observations made during a Voyage round the World, on Physical Geogramphy, Natural History, and Ethic Philosophy". It need not be said, that these works contain much curious and useful information. Mr. George Forster having been thought to be guilty of some misrepresentations with regard to certain facts, Mr. Wales wrote remarks upon his book, to which Mr. Forster replied. As to one or two hasty and premature attempts to gratify the public curiosity, they are not worthy to be noticed.

VI. 1776.

It had long been a favourite object with navigators, and particularly with the English, to discover a shorter, a more commodious, and a more profitable course of failing to Japan and China, and, indeed, to the East Indies in general, than by making the tedious circuit of the Cape of Good Hope. To find a western passage round North America, had been attempted by feveral bold adventurers, from Frobisher's first voyage, in 1576, to those of James and of Fox, in 1631. By these expeditions a large addition was made to the knowledge of the northern extent of America, and Hudson's and Baffin's Bays were difcovered. But the wished-for passage, on that fide, into the Pacific Ocean, was still unattained. Nor were the various attempts of our countrymen, and of the Dutch, to find fuch a passage, by failing round the north of Asia, in an eastern direction, attended with better fuccess. Wood's failure, in 1676, appears to have concluded the long lift of unfortunate expeditions in that century. The discovery, if not absolutely despaired of, had been unsuccessful in such a number of instances, that it ceased, for many years, to be an object of pursuit*.

n

10

n

Ta

to

fa

n

I

fa

e

tl

b

ne

W

fo

ti

0

The question was again revived in the present century. Mr. Dobbs, a warm advocate for the probability of a north-west passage through Hudson's Bay, once more recalled the attention

^{*} Introduction to Captain Cook's Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, p. xxviii.

i-

0

a

d

e

d

1

,

e

t

V

1

S

.

ł

f

of this country to that undertaking. In confequence of the spirit by him excited, Captain VI. Middleton was sent out by Government in 1741, 1776. and Captains Smith and Moore in 1746. But, though an act of Parliament had been passed, which secured a reward of twenty thousand pounds to the discovery of a passage, the accomplishment of this savourite object continued at as great a distance as ever *.

To afcertain a matter of fuch importance and magnitude in navigation, was referved to be another glory of his present majesty's reign. The idea was peculiarly fuited to the enlightened mind of the noble lord at the head of the Admiralty, and he adopted it with ardour. Preparatory to the execution of the delign, Lord Mulgrave failed with two ships, to determine how far navigation was practicable towards the north pole. In this expedition, his lordship met with the fame insuperable difficulties which had been experienced by former voyagers. Nevertheless, the expectation of opening a communication between the Pacific and Atlantic Oceans, by a northerly course, was not abandoned; and it was refolved that a voyage should be undertaken for that purpose t.

For the conduct of an enterprize, the operations of which were intended to be so new, so

^{*} Introduction to Captain Cook's Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, p. xxix.

[†] Ibid. p. xxix. xxx.

t

tl

T

tl

tl

e

E

tl

tl

a

f

a

tl

·h

p

0

m

th

g

ta

tl

A

E

€ на р. VI. 1476.

extensive, and so various, it was evident that great ability, skill, and experience were indifpenfably necessary t. That Captain Cook was of all men the best qualified for carrying it, into execution, was a matter that could not be called in question. But, however ardently it might be wished that he would take upon him the command of the service, no one (not even his friend and patron, Lord Sandwich himself) presumed to folicit him upon the subject. The benefits he had already conferred on science and navigation, and the labours and dangers he had gone through, were fo many and great, that it was not deemed reasonable to ask him to engage in fresh perils. At the same time, nothing could be more natural than to confult him upon every thing relative to the business; and his advice was particularly requested with regard to the properest person for conducting the voyage. To determine this point, the Captain, Sir Hugh Pallifer, and Mr. Stephens were invited to Lord Sandwich's to dinner. Here, besides taking into consideration what officer should be recommended to his Majesty for accomplishing the purposes in view, many things were faid concerning the nature of the defign. Its grandeur and dignity, the confequences of it to navigation and science, and the completion it would give to the whole system of discoveries, were enlarged upon in the course of the conversation. Captain Cook was so fired

[†] Introduction, ubi fupra, p. xxix. xxx.

t

[-

f

d

e

1-

d

d

e

1,

d

ıl

y

n

S

S

f

1776.

10 Feb.

with the contemplation and representation of CHAP. the object, that he started up, and declared, that he himself would undertake the direction of the enterprize. It is easy to suppose, with what pleasure the noble lord, and the other gentlemen, received a proposal which was so agreeable to their fecret wishes, and which they thought of the highest importance towards attaining the ends of the voyage *. No time was lost by the Earl of Sandwich, in laying the matter before the King; and Captain Cook was appointed to the command of the expedition, on the tenth of February, 1776 t. At the fame time, it was agreed, that, on his return to England, he should be restored to his situation at Greenwich; and, if no vacancy occurred during the interval, the officer who fucceeded him was to refign in his favour tt.

The command and the direction of the enterprize being thus happily fettled, it became an object of great importance to determine what might be the best course that could be given to the voyage. All former navigators round the globe had returned to Europe by the Cape of Good Hope. But to Captain Cook the arduous talk was now affigned of attempting it by reaching the high northern latitudes between Asia and America; and the adoption of this resolution was,

^{*} From the information of the Right Honourable the Earl of Sandwich.

⁺ From the books of the Admiralty.

tt From Lord Sandwich's information.

n

0

ir

h

ai

0

C

tl

a

W

W

~

ec ec

56

23

23

cc

ab

w bl

HN

VI. 1776.

 Θ

I believe, the refult of his own reflections upon the fubject. The usual plan, therefore, of discovery was reverfed; fo that instead of a passage from the Atlantic to the Pacific, one from the latter into the former was to be tried. Whatever openings or inlets there might be on the east fide of America, that lie in a direction which could afford any hopes of a passage, it was wifely foreseen that the ultimate success of the expedition would depend upon there being an open sea between the west side of that continent and the extremities of Asia. Accordingly Captain Cook was ordered to proceed into the Pacific Ocean, through the chain of the new islands which had been visited by him in the southern tropic. After having croffed the equator into the northern parts of that ocean, he was then to-hold fuch a course as might probably fix many interesting points in geography, and produce intermediate discoveries, in his progress northward to the principal scene of his operations *. With regard to his grand object, it was determined, for the wifest reasons, and after the most mature deliberation and enquiry, that upon his arrival on the coalt of New Albion, he should proceed northward as far as the latitude of 65°, and not lose any time in exploring rivers or inlets, or upon any other account, until he had gotten into that latitude t.

^{*} Introduction, ubi fupra, p. xxx. xxxl.

^{· +} See these reasons represented at large in the admir-

On

CO-

ge

he

rer

alt

ch

ras he

an

nt

in fic

ds

rn

ne

ld

n-

ce

1-

k.

r-

f

is

d

r

To give every possible encouragement to the CHAP. profecution of the great defign in view, the motives of interest were added to the obligations of duty. In the act of Parliament which passed in 1745, the reward of twenty thousand pounds had been only held out to the ships belonging to any of his Majesty's Subjects, while his Majesty's own ships were excluded. Another, and more capital defect of this act was, that it confined the reward to fuch ships alone as should discover a passage through Hudson's Bay. By a new law, which passed in 1776, both these deficiencies were effectually remedied. It was now enacted. " That if any ship belonging to any of his Ma-" jesty's subjects, or to his Majesty, shall find " out, and fail through, any passage by sea, " between the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, in " any direction, or parallel of the northern hemif-" phere, to the northward of the 52° of northern " latitude, the owners of fuch ships, if belonging " to any of his Majesty's subjects, or the com-" mander, officers, and Seamen of Such ship belonging " to his Majesty, shall receive, as a reward for " fuch discovery, the sum of twenty thousand " pounds *, "

able Introduction to Captain Cook's last voyage; together with a curious and interesting account, never before published, of the methods which have been taken by the Hudson's Bay Company, to explore the western parts of North America, extending from that bay, p. xl.—li.

^{*} Introduction, ubi fupra, p. xxxv, xxxvi.

CHAP. VI. That every thing might be done which could facilitate the success of the grand expedition, Lieutenant Pickersgill was sent out, in 1776, with directions to explore the coasts of Bassin's Bay; and, in the next year, Lieutenant Young was commissioned not only to examine the western parts of that bay, but to endeavour to find a passage, on that side, from the Atlantic to the Pacific Ocean. Nothing was performed by either of these gentlemen that promoted the purposes of Captain Cook's voyage †.

M

be

bu

Th

w

ot

C

W

tai

fu

fai

CO

fo

or

be

W

in

he

in

th

af

ke

ti

Two vessels were fixed upon by government for the intended service; the Resolution, and the Discovery. The command of the former was given to Captain Cook, and of the other to Captain Clerke. To the Resolution was assigned the same complement of officers and men which she had during her preceding voyage; and the only difference in the establishment of the Discovery from that of the Adventure, was in the single instance of her having no marine officer

on board.

From the time of the two ships being put into commission, the greatest degree of attention and zeal was exerted by the Earl of Sandwich, and the rest of the Board of Admiralty, to have them equipped in the most complete manner. Both the vessels were supplied with as much of every necessary article as could conveniently be stowed, and with the best of each kind that could be pro-

^{*} Introduction, ubi fupra, p. xxxvii - xl.

uld

on,

76,

in's

ing

the

to

to

by

ur.

ent

he

ras

to

ed

ch

he

if

he

er

to

d

m

h

cured. Whatever, likewise, the experience of CHAP. he former voyages had shewn to be of any ntility in preferving the health of feamen, was provided in a large abundance. That some permanent benefit might be conveyed to the inhabitants of Otaheite, and of the other islands of the Pacific Ocean, whom our navigators might happen to visit, it was graciously commanded by his Majesty that an assortment of useful animals should be carried out to those countries. Accordingly, a bull, two cows with their calves, and feveral theep, with hay and corn for their sublistence. were taken on board; and it was intended to add other serviceable animals to these, when Captain Cook should arrive at the Cape of Good Hope. With the same benevolent purposes, the Captain was furnished with a sufficient quantity of fuch of our European garden feeds, as could not fail of being a valuable present to the newly-difcovered islands, by adding fresh supplies of food to their own vegetable productions. order of the Board of Admiralty, many articles besides were delivered to our Commander, which were calculated, in various ways, to improve the condition of the natives of the other hemisphere. Still farther to promote a friendly intercourse with them, and to carry on a traffic that might be profitable on both fides, an ample affortment was provided of iron tools and trinkets. An attention no less humane was extended to the wants of our own people. Some additional clothing, adapted to a cold climate, was

Th

de

ic

VC

h

bt.

w lea

be

al

w

bl:

h

h

co

u

ev

of

rea

h

en

im

ou

dr

tra

fel

an

fo

VI. nothing was denied to our navigators that could 1776. be supposed to be in the least conducive to their health, or even to their convenience.

It was not to these things only that the extraordinary care of Lord Sandwich, and of the other gentlemen at the head of the naval department, was confined. They were equally folicitous to afford every affiftance that was calculated to render the expedition of public utility. Several astronomical and nautical instruments were intrusted, by the Board of Longitude, to Captain Cook, and Mr. King his fecond Lieutenant; who had undertaken to make the necessary obfervations, during the voyage, for the improvement of astronomy and navigation. It was originally intended that a professed observator should be sent out in the Resolution; but the scientific abilities of the Captain and his lieutenant rendered the appointment of fuch a person absolutely unnecessary. The case was somewhat different with regard to the Discovery. Mr. William Bayley, who had already given fatisfactory proofs of his skill and diligence as an observator, while he was employed in Captain Furneaux's ship, during the late voyage, was engaged a fecond time, in that capacity, and appointed to fail on board Captain Clerke's vessel. The department of natural history was assigned to Mr. Anderson, the surgeon of the Resolution, who was as willing as he was well qualified, to describe every thing in that branch of science which

and

ould

heir

ctra-

the

iart.

icit-

ited

ve-

ere

ap.

nt;

ob-

ve-

gin-

uld

ific

er-

ely

ent

am

ry

or,

x's

a

to

e-

r.

10

e-

h

hould occur worthy of notice. From the re- CHAP. marks of this gentleman, Captain Cook had derived confiderable affiftance in his last navigaion; especially with regard to the very copious vocabulary of the language of Otaheite, and he comparative specimen of the languages of the other islands which had then been visited. There were feveral young men among our Commander's lea officers, who, under his direction, could be usefully employed in constructing charts, in aking views of the coasts and headlands near which our voyagers might pass, and in drawing plans of the bays and harbours in which they hould anchor. Without a constant attention to his object, the Captain was fensible that his difcoveries could not be rendered profitable to uture navigators. That he might go out with every help which could ferve to make the refult of the voyage entertaining to the generality of readers, as well as instructive to the failor and the scholar, Mr. Webber was fixed upon, and engaged to embark in the Resolution, for the express purpose of supplying the unavoidable imperfections of written accounts, by enabling our people to preferve, and to bring home, fuch drawings of the most memorable scenes of their transactions, as could only be executed by a professed and skilful artist.

As the last mark of the extraordinary attention which the Earl of Sandwich, Sir Hugh Pallifer, and others of the Board of Admiralty had uniformly shewn to the preparations for the expedi1776.

k

fu

fi

d

W

to

h

b

pi

na

to

OI

fa

W

tle

bo

de

W

fti in

id

na

VI. 1776. 8 June. tion, they went down to Long Reach, and paid a visit to the ships, on the eighth of June, to examine whether every thing was completed consormably to their intentions and orders, and to the satisfaction of all who were to embark in the voyage. His lordship and the rest of the Admiralty Board, together with several noblemen and gentlemen of their acquaintance, honoured Captain Cook, on that day, with their company at dinner. Both upon their coming on board and their going ashore, they were saluted with seventeen guns, and with three cheers.

As the ships were to touch at Otaheite and the Society Islands, it had been determined not to omit the only opportunity which might ever offer of carrying Omai back to his native country. Accordingly, he left London, on the twentyfourth of June, in company with Captain Cook; and it was with a mixture of regret and fatisfaction that he took his departure. When England, and those who, during his stay, had honoured him with their protection or friendship were spoken of, his spirits were sensibly affected, and it was with difficulty that he could refrain from tears. But his eyes began to sparkle with joy, as foon as ever the conversation was turned to his own islands. The good treatment he received in England had made a deep impression upon his mind; and he entertained the highest ideas of the country and of the people. Nevertheless the pleasing prospect he now had before him of returning home, loaded with what, he well aid

to

ted

and in

the

ble.

ur

neir

on

ted

and

not

ver

try.

ity.

ok;

fac.

rd,

red

ere

and

om oy,

to ved his of the of rell

knew, would there be esteemed invaluable trea- CHAP. fures, and the flattering hope which the possesfion of these afforded him of attaining to a distinguished superiority among his countrymen, were considerations which operated, by degrees, to suppress every uneasy sensation. By the time he had gotten on board the ship, he appeared to be quite happy.

His Majesty had furnished Omai with an ample provision of every article which our English navigators, during their former intercourse with Otaheite and the Society Islands, had observed to be in any estimation there, either as useful or ornamental. Many presents, likewise, of the fame nature, had been made him by Lord Sandwich, Sir Joseph Banks, and several other gentlemen and ladies of his acquaintance. In short, both during his residence in England, and at his departure from it, no method had been neglected, which could be calculated to render him the instrument of conveying to the inhabitants of the islands of the Pacific Ocean, the most exalted ideas of the greatness and generosity of the British nation *.

1776.

^{*} Captain Cook's Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, Vol. i.

CHAPTER THE SEVEETH.

The History of Captain Cook's Life, from the Commencement of his Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, to his Death.

С н A P. EVERY preparation for the voyage being com-VII. pleted, Captain Cook received an order to pro-1776. ceed to Plymouth, and to take the Discovery under his command. Having, accordingly, given the proper directions to Captain Clerke, he failed from the Nore to the Downs, on the twentyfifth of June. On the thirtieth of the same month, 25 June. he anchored in Plymouth Sound, where the 30. Discovery was already arrived. It was the eighth 8 July. of July before our Commander received his inftructions for the voyage; and, at the fame time, he was ordered to proceed, with the Resolution, to the Cape of Good Hope. Captain Clerke,

he should join his ship.

In the evening of the twelfth, Captain Cook flood out of Plymouth Sound, and pursued his course down the channel. It was very early that he began his judicious operations for preserving the health of his crew; for, on the seventeenth, the ship was smoked between the decks with gunpowder, and the spare sails were well aired.

who was detained in London by some unavoid-

able circumstances, was to follow, as soon as

17:

12.

On

a

a

n

t

C

tl

d

W

M

P

0

n

It

W

h

ai

m

h

On the thirtieth, the moon being totally eclipfed, the Captain observed it with a night telescope. He had not, on this occasion, an opportunity of making many observations. The reason was, that the moon was hidden behind the clouds the greatest part of the time; and this was particularly the case, when the beginning and the end of total darkness, and the end of the eclipse, happened.

om-

om.

oro-

ery

ven

led

ity.

th,

the

hth

in-

ne,

OII,

ce,

id-

as

ok

his

hat

ing

th,

ith

ed.

It being found that there was not hay and corn sufficient for the subsistence of the stock of animals on board, till the arrival of our people at the Cape of Good Hope, Captain Cook determined to touch at Tenerisse. This island he thought better adapted to the purposes of procuring these articles, and other refreshments, than Madeira. On the first of August, he anchored in the road of Santa Cruz, and immediately dispatched an officer to the Governor, who, with the utmost politeness, granted every thing which our Commander requested.

Were a judgment to be formed from the appearance of the country in the neighbourhood of Santa Cruz, it might be concluded that Teneriffe is so barren a spot, as to be insufficient for the maintenance even of its own inhabitants. It was proved, however, by the ample supplies which our navigators received, that the islanders had enough to spare for visiters. The necessary articles of refreshment were procured at such moderate prices, as to confirm Captain Cook in his opinion, that Teneriffe is a more eligible

Vol. II.

C H A P. VII. 1776. 30 July.

I Augus

VII. are bound on long voyages. Indeed, the wine of the latter island is far superior to that of the former; but then it can only be purchased by a

fum of money proportionally larger.

During the short stay which the Captain made at Teneriffe, he continued with great affiduity his astronomical observations; and Mr. . Anderfon has not a little contributed to the farther knowledge of the country, by his remarks on its general state, its natural appearances, its productions, and its inhabitants. He learned from a fensible and well informed gentleman, who resided in the island, that a shrub is common there, which agrees exactly with the description given by Tournefort and Linnæus, of the tea shrub, as growing in China and Japan. It is reckoned a weed, and every year is rooted out in large quantities from the vineyards. Spaniards, however, fometimes use it as tea, and afcribe to it all the qualities of that which is imported from China They give it also the name of tea, and fay that it was found in the country when the islands were first discovered. Another botanical curiofity is called the impregnated lemon; which is a perfect and distinct lemon, enclosed within another, and differing from the outer one only in being a little more globular.

E

נו

The air and climate of Teneriffe are, in general, remarkably healthful, and particularly adapted to give relief in pulmonary complaints.

ch

ne

he

3

de

ty

erer

011 .0.

m

on

on ea

15 ut

he

a, ch

he ne

d.

717ct

ng

re

in ly ts.

This the gentleman before mentioned endea. CHAP. voured to account for from its being always in a person's power to procure a different temperature of the air, by residing at different heights in the island. He expressed, therefore, his surprize that the physicians of England should never have thought of fending their confumptive patients to Teneriffe, instead of Nice or Lifbon.

Although it is not understood that there is any great similarity between the manners of the English and those of the Spaniards, it was observable, that the difference between them was very little perceived by Omai. He only faid, that the Spaniards did not appear to be fo friendly as the English; and that, in their persons, . they approached to some resemblance of his own countrymen *.

On the fourth, Captain Cook failed from Teneriffe, and proceeded on his voyage. Such was his attention, both to the discipline and the health of his company, that twice in the space of five days, he exercised them at great guns and small arms, and cleared and smoked the ship below decks. On the evening of the tenth. when the Resolution was at a small distance from the island of Bonavista, she ran so close upon a number of funken rocks, that she did but just weather the breakers. The situation of our voyagers, for a few minutes, was very

1776

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 8-28.

alarming. In this fituation the Captain, with the intrepid coolness which diftinguished his charac-VII. ter, did not chuse to found, as that, without 1776any possibility of lessening, might have heigh-

tened the danger.

While our Commander was near the Cape de Verde Islands, he had an opportunity of correcting an affertion of Mr. Nichelfon's, with regard to the manner of failing by those islands, which, if implicitly trusted to, might prove of dangerous confequence. On the thirteenth, our navigators arrived before Port Praya, in the Island of St. Jago; but as the Discovery was not there, and little water had been expended in the passage from Teneriffe, Captain Cook did not think proper to go in; but stood to the southward.

1

In the course of the voyage, between the latitudes of 12° and 7° north, the weather was generally dark and gloomy. The rains were frequent, and accompanied with that close and fultry weather which too often brings on fickness, in this passage. At such a time the worst confequences are to be apprehended; and commanders of ships cannot be too much upon their guard. It is necessary for them to purify the air between decks with fires and fmoke, and to oblige their people to dry their clothes at every opportunity. The constant observance of these precautions on board the Refolution, was attended with fuch fuccels, that the Captain had now fewer fick men than on either of his former voyages. This was the more remarkable, as, in confequence of

the feams of the veffel having opened to wide as CHAP. to admit the rain when it fell, there was fcarcely a man who could lie dry in his bed; and the officers in the gun-room were all driven out of their cabbins by the water that came through the fides. When fettled weather returned, the caulkers were employed in repairing these defects, by caulking the decks and infide weather-works of the ship; for the humanity of our Commander would not trust the workmen over the fides, while the Resolution was at sea.

16

11

h-

le

t-

d

h,

15

rs

d

c

k

e

as

re

d

e-

rs

d.

ir

V.

h

k

15 of

On the first of September, our navigators croffed the equator *. While, on the eighth, Captain Cook was near the eastern coast of Brazil, he was at confiderable pains to fettle its longitude, which, till some better astronomical observations are made on shore in that country, he concluded to be thirty-five degrees and a half, or thirty-fix degrees west, at most.

As our people proceeded on their voyage, they frequently faw, in the night, those luminous marine animals which have formerly been mentioned and described. Some of them appeared to be confiderably larger than any which the Captain had met with before; and fometimes they were so numerous, that hundreds of them were visible at the same moment.

On the eighteenth of October, the Resolution came to an anchor in Table Bay, at the Cape of Good Hope; and the usual compliments having

I Sept 6.

^{*} This was in the longitude of 27° 18' west.

V

te

I

d

0

T

b

i

VII. 1776. 31 Oa.

CHAP. been paid to Baron Plettenberg the Governor. Captain Cook immediately applied himself to his customary operations. Nothing remarkable occurred till the evening of the thirty-first, when a tempest arose from the south-east, which lasted three days, and which was so violent, that the Resolution was the only ship in the bay that rode out the gale without dragging her anchors. The effects of the storm were fensibly felt by our people on shore; for their tents and observatory were torn to pieces, and their astronomical quadrant narrowly escaped irreparable damage. On the third of November, the tempest ceased, and the next day the English were enabled to resume their different employments.

3 Nov.

It was not till the tenth of the month that Captain Cook had the fatisfaction of feeing the Discovery arrive in the bay, and effect her junction with the Refolution. She had failed from England on the first of August, and would have reached the Cape of Good Hope a week fooner, if she had not been driven from the coast by the late storm. Every assistance was immediately given to put her into a proper condition for proceeding on the voyage.

While the necessary preparations for the future navigation were completing, a difaster happened with regard to the cattle which had been carried out in the Resolution. They had been conveyed on shore for the purpose of grazing. The bull, and two cows, with their calves, had been fent to graze along with some other cattle; but

or,

his

OC-

ien

ed

he

nat

rs.

by

ercal

re.

d,

to

at

ne

er

b

ld

k

e

15

d

CHAP.

VII.

1776.

14 Nov.

Captain Cook was advised to keep the sheep, which were fixteen in number, close to the tents, where they were penned up every evening. During the night preceding the fourteenth, fome dogs having gotten in among them, forced them out of the pen, killed four, and dispersed the rest. Six of them were recovered the next day; but the two rams, and two of the finest ewes in the whole flock, were amongst those which were missing. Baron Plettenberg being at this time in the country, our commander applied to Mr. Hemmy, the lieutenant governor, and to the fiscal, for redress; and both these gentlemen promifed to use their endeavours for the recovery of the lost sheep. It is the boast of the Dutch, that the police at the Cape is so carefully executed, that it is scarcely possible for a slave, with all his cunning and knowledge of the country, to effectuate his escape. Nevertheless, Captain Cook's sheep evaded all the vigilance of the fiscal's officers and people. At length, after much trouble and expence, by employing some of the meanest and lowest scoundrels in the place, he recovered all but the two ewes, of which he never could hear the least tidings. The character given of the fellows to whom the Captain was obliged to have recourse, by the person who recommended their being applied to, was, that for a ducatoon they would cut their master's throat, burn the house over his head, and bury him and the whole family in the ashes.

During the stay of our voyagers at the Cape,

H 4

VII. derson, made a short excursion into the neighbouring country. This gentleman, as usual, was very diligent in recording every thing which appeared to him worthy of observation. His remarks, however, in the present case, will be deemed of little consequence, compared with the full, accurate, and curious account of the Cape of Good Hope, with which Dr. Sparrman hath

lately favoured the literary world.

With respect to Captain Cook, besides the unavoidable care which lay upon him, in providing his ships with whatever was requisite for the commodious and successful prosecution of the voyage, his attention was eminently directed to scientific objects. He was anxious to ascertain the currents, the variations of the compass, and the latitude and longitude of the places to which he came. The observations which he collected, and recorded in his journal, while he was at the Cape of Good Hope, will be esteemed of the greatest importance by judicious navigators *.

After the disafter which had happened to the sheep, it may well be supposed that our Commander did not long trust on shore those which remained. Accordingly, he gave orders to have them, and the other cattle, conveyed on board as fast as possible. He made an addition, also, to the original stock, by the purchase of two young bulls, two heisers, two young stone-horses, two mares, two rams, several ewes and

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 29-50.

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK. 105

goats, and some rabbits and poultry. All these CHAP. animals were intended for New Zealand, Otaheite, and the neighbouring island; and, indeed, for any other places, in the course of the voyage, where the leaving of any of them might be of fervice to posterity.

In.

gh.

vas

ich

His be

the

pe ath

he

Vi-

he

he

to he

he

he

nd

he

he

he

m-

ve

rd

),

0

e-

d

In the supplies which were provided at the Cape, Captain Cook paid a particular regard to the nature and extent of his undertaking. As it was impossible to tell when, or where, he might meet with a place which could fo amply contribute to his necessities, he thought proper to lay in such a store of provisions for both ships, as would be fufficient to last them for two years and upwards.

Our Commander having given a copy of his instructions to Captain Clerke, and an order directing him how to proceed in case of a separation, weighed from Table Bay on the thirtieth of November, though it was not till the third of December that he got clear of the land. On the fixth, the ships passed through several spots of water, nearly of a red colour. When some of this was taken up, it was found to contain a large quantity of small animals, of a reddish hue, and which the microscope discovered to resemble a cray-fish. As our navigators pursued their course to the south - east, a very strong gale, which they had from the westward, was followed by a mountainous fea, in consequence of which the Resolution rolled and tumbled so much, that the cattle on board were preserved with the

30 Nov. 3 Dec.

G

h

m

m

ca hi

v

he

Is

th

th

th

of C:

pa If

la

K

pa

W

W

a

ti

b

bi it

A

fo

VII. goats, especially the males, together with some 1776. sheep, died, notwithstanding all the care to prevent it that was exercised by our people. This missortune was chiefly owing to the coldness of the weather, which now began to be felt in the most sensible manner.

12 Dec.

On the twelfth, land was feen, which, upon a nearer approach, was found to confift of two islands. That which lies most to the fouth, and is the largest, was judged by Captain Cook to be about fifteen leagues in circuit. The northerly one is about nine leagues in circuit; and the two islands are at the distance of five leagues from each other *. As the ships passed through the channel between them, our voyagers could not discover, with the affistance of their best glasses, either tree or shrub on either of them. They feemed to have a rocky and bold shore, and their surface is for the most part composed of barren mountains, the fummits and sides of which were covered with fnow. These two islands, together with four others, which lie from nine to twelve degrees of longitude more to the east, and nearly in the fame latitude, had been difcovered by Captains Marion du Fresne, and Crozet, French navigators, in January 1772, on their passage, in two ships, from the Cape of

^{*} The largest island lies in latitude 46° 53' fouth, and in longitude 37° 46' east; and the smaller one in latitude 46° 4' fouth, and in 38° 8' east longitude.

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK. 107

Good Hope to the Philippine Islands. As no Char. names had been assigned to them in a chart of VII. the Southern Ocean, which Captain Crozet communicated to Captain Cook in 1775, our Commander distinguished the two larger ones by calling them Prince Edward's Islands, after his Majesty's fourth son. To the other sour, with a view of commemorating the discoverers, he gave the name of Marion's and Crozet's Islands.

the

me

his

of the

on

wo

to

rly

WO

om

the

not

es,

ney

of ich

is,

ft,

lif-

nd

on

of

nd

ide

Though it was now the middle of summer in this hemisphere, the weather was not less severe than what is generally met with in England in the very depth of winter. Instead, however, of being discouraged by this circumstance, the Captain shaped his course in such a manner as to pass to the southward of Marion's and Crozet's Islands, that he might get into the latitude of land which had been discovered by Monsieur de Kerguelen, another French pavigator. It was part of our Commander's instructions to examine whether a good harbour might not here be found.

As our voyagers, on the twenty fourth, were steering to the eastward, a fog clearing up a little, which had involved them for some time, and which had rendered their navigation both tedious and dangerous, land was seen, bearing south-south-east. Upon a nearer approach, it was found to be an island of considerable height, and about three leagues in circuit. Another island, of the same magnitude, was soon after discovered, and in a short space a

24 Dec.

th

tl

in

tl in

in

tv ir

eı

a

n

77

fa

F

3

n

a

t

a

o

t

a

f

third, besides some smaller ones. At times, as CHAP. the fog broke away, there was the appearance VII. of land over the small islands, and Captain Cook 1776. entertained thoughts of steering for it, by running in between them. But, on drawing nearer, he found that, so long as the weather continued foggy, this would be a perilous attempt. For if there should be no passage, or if our people should meet with any sudden danger, there was fuch a prodigious sea, breaking on all the shore in a frightful furf, that it would have been impossible for the vessels to be gotten off. At the fame time, the Captain faw another island; and, as he did not know how many more might fue ceed, he judged it prudent, in order to avoid getting entangled among unknown lands in a thick fog, to wait for clearer weather.

The island last mentioned is a high round rock, which was named BLIGH'S CAP *. Our Commander had received some very slight information concerning it at Tenerisse, and his sagacity in tracing it was such as immediately led him to determine that it was the same that Monsseur de Kerguelen had called the list of Rendezvous. His reason for giving it that name is not very apparent; for nothing can rendezvous upon it but sowls of the air, it being certainly inaccessible to every other animal. The weather beginning to clear up, Captain Cook steered in for

^{*} The latitude of Bligh's Cap is 48° 29' fouth, and its longitude 68° 40' east.

s, as

ance

Cook

run.

arer.

nued

or if

ople

Was

ores

im-

the

and,

fuc

void

in a

ock,

om-

tion

y in

to

r de

ous.

ery

1 it

effi-

gin-

for

lits

the land, of which a faint view had been ob- CHAP. tained in the morning. This was Kerguelen's Land. No fooner had our navigators gotten off Cape François, than they observed the coast, to the fouthward, to be much indented by projecting points and bays; from which circumstance they were fure of finding a good harbour. Accordingly, fuch a harbour was speedily discovered, in which the ships came to an anchor on the twenty-fifth, being Christmas Day. Upon landing, our Commander found the shore almost entirely covered with penguins and other birds, and with feals. The latter, which were not numerous, having been unaccustomed to visiters. were so insensible of fear, that as many as were wanted, for the purpose of making use of their fat or blubber, were killed without difficulty. Fresh water was so plentiful, that every gully afforded a large stream; but not a single tree or shrub, or the least sign of it, could be met with, and but very little herbage of any fort. Before Captain Cook returned to his ship, he ascended the first ridge of rocks, that rife in a kind of amphitheatre, above one another, in hopes of obtaining a view of the country; in which, however, he was disappointed; for, previously to his reaching the top, there came on fo thick a fog, that he could scarcely find his way down again. In the evening, the seine was hauled at the head of the harbour, but only half a dozen fmall fish were caught. As no better success attended a trial which was made the next day

1776.

25 Dec.

VII. provision was in birds, the store of which was 1776. inexhaustible.

27 Dec.

The people having wrought hard for two days, and nearly completed their water, the Captain allowed them the twenty-feventh, as a day of rest, to celebrate Christmas. Many of them, in consequence of this indulgence, went on shore, and made excursions, in different directions, into the country, which they found barren and desolate in the highest degree. One of them, in his ramble, discovered, and brought to our Commander, in the evening, a quant bottle, sastened with some wire to a projecting rock on the north side of the harbour. This bottle contained a piece of parchment, on which was written the following inscription:

V

C

e

n

F

F

F

11

O

F

V

C

f

t

Ludovico XV. Galliarum
rege et d. * de Boynes
regi a Secretis ad Res
maritimas annis 1772 et
1773.

It was clear, from this inscription, that our English navigators were not the first who had been in the place. As a memorial of our peoples having touched at the same harbour, Captain

^{*} The (d.) is doubtless a contraction for the word Domino. Monsieur de Boynes was then the secretary of the French marine.

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK. 111

Cook wrote, as follows, on the other fide of CHAP.
the parchment:
VII.

Naves Refolution

et Discovery

de Rege Magna Britannia,

Decembris 1776.

fresh

. Was

two

the

as a

y of

went erent

und

One

ught

uart

Ling

This

hich

our

had

ples

tain

Do-

f the

He then put it again into a bottle, together with a filver two-penny piece of 1772. Having covered the mouth of the bottle with a leaden cap, he placed it, the next morning, in a pile of stones erected for the purpose, upon a little eminence on the north shore of the harbour, and near to the place where it was first found. In this position it cannot escape the notice of any European, whom accident or design may bring into the port. Here the Captain displayed the British slag, and named the place Christmas Harbour, from our voyagers having arrived in it on that sessions.

After our Commander had finished the business of the inscription, he went in his boat round the harbour, to examine what the shore afforded. His more particular object was to look for drist-wood; but he did not find a single piece throughout the whole extent of the place. On the same day, accompanied by Mr. King, his second Lieutenant, he went upon Cape François, with the hope, that, from this elevation, he might obtain a view of the sea coast, and of the adjoin-

ing islands. But when he had gotten up, he found that every distant object below him was VII. obscured in a thick fog. The land on the same 1776. plain, or of a greater height, was sufficiently visible, and appeared naked and desolate in the highest degree; fome hills to the fouthward excepted, which were covered with fnow.

f

d

t

I

p

15

t

tl

n

11

16

it

al ft

W

C

n

le

lo

is

gi

le

th

29 Dec.

On the twenty-ninth, Captain Cook departed from Christmas Harbour, and proceeded to range along the coast, with a view of discovering its position and extent. In pursuing his course, he met with feveral promontories and bays, together with a peninfula, all of which he has described and named, chiefly in honour of his various friends. Such was the danger of the navigation, that the ships had more than once a very narrow escape. On the same day, another harbour was discovered, in which the vessels came to an anchor for one night. Here the Captain, Mr. Gore, and Mr. Bayley went on shore, to examine the country, which they found, if possible, more barren and desolate than the land that lies about Christmas harbour: and yet, if the least fertility were any where to be expected, it ought to have existed in this place, which is completely sheltered from the bleak and predominating foutherly and westerly winds. Our Commander observed, with regret, that there was neither food nor covering for cattle of any fort; and that, if he left any, they must inevitably perish. Finding no encouragement to continue his refearches, he weighed anchor and put to

VII. 1776 30 Deci

fea on the thirtieth, having given to the harbour C n & F. the name of PORT PALLISER *. On the fame day he came to a point, which proved to be the very eastern extremity of Kerguelen's Land †. In a large bay, near this point, there was a prodigious quantity of fea-weed, fome of which is of a most extraordinary length. It feemed to be the fame kind of vegetable production that Sir Joseph Banks had formerly distinguished by the appellation of Fucus Giganteus. Although the stem is not much thicker than a man's hand, Captain Cook thought himfelf well warranted to fay, that part of it grows to the length of fixty fathoms and upward.

The refult of the examination of Kerguelen's Land was, that the quantity of latitude which it occupies doth not much exceed one degree and a quarter. Its extent, from east to west; still remains undecided. At its first discovery, it was probably supposed to belong to a southern continent; but, in fact, it is an island, and that of no great extent **. If our Commander had not been unwilling to deprive Monfieur Kerguelen of the honour of its bearing his name, he

he

vas

me

tly

the

ard

ted

ige

its

he

ge-

has

his

the

a

her

fels !

ap.

re,

if

ind

if

ed, 15

in-

m-

ras

rt;

oly

ue

to

^{*} It is fituated in the latitude of 49° 3' fouth, and the longitude of 69° 37' east.

[†] This point, which Captain Cook called Cape Digby is situated in the latitude of 49° 23' fouth, and the longitude of 70° 34' east.

^{**} Kerguelen, who was acquainted with nearly fourfcore leagues of its coast, fays, that he has reason to believe that it is about two hundred leagues in circuit.

ca

fo

in

w

te

an

hi

an

ha

t

ar

m

by

O.

be

T

pe

10

be

ha

be

ar

ve

m

W

or

CHAP. would have been disposed, from its sterility, to VII. call it the Island of Desolation.

1776.

It should here be mentioned, that Monsieur de Kerguelen made two visits to the coast of this country; one in 1772, and another in 1773. With the first of these voyages Captain Cook had only a very flight acquaintance, and to the fecond he was totally a stranger; so that he scarcely had any opportunity of comparing his own discoveries with those of the French navi gator. Monsieur de Kerguelen was peculiarly unfortunate, in having done but little to complete what he had begun; for though he discover ed a new land, he could not, in two expeditions to it, once bring his ships to an anchor upon any part of its coasts. Captain Cook had either fewer difficulties to struggle with, or was more fuccessful in furmounting them.

During the short time in which our voyages lay in Christmas Harbour, Mr. Anderson lost no opportunity of searching the country in every direction. Perhaps no place, hitherto discovered under the same parallel of latitude, affords to scanty a field for a natural historian. All that could be known in the space of time allotted him, and probably all that will ever be worthy to be known, was collected by this gentleman. A verdure, which had been seen at a little distance from the shore, gave our people the flattering expectation of meeting with a variety of herbage: but in this they were greatly deceived. On landing, it was perceived that the lively

ieur

of

773

OOK

the

he

his

avi

arly

on-

ver

ion

por

ther

ore

gers

loft

rery

red

10

hat

ted

thy

an.

dif

lat.

of

ed. ely colour which had imposed upon them, was oc- CHAR casioned only by one small plant, not unlike some forts of Saxifrage. It grows in large spreads ing tufts, a confiderable way up the hills. The whole catalogue of plants does not exceed fixteen or eighteen, including several kinds of moss, and a beautiful species of lichen, which rifes higher up from the rocks than the rest of the vegetable productions. There is not the appear ance of a shrub in the whole country. Nature has been somewhat more bountiful in furnishing it with animals; though, strictly speaking, they are not inhabitants of the place, being all of the marine kind. In general, the land is only used by them for breeding, and as a refting-place. Of these animals the most considerable are seals; being of that fort which is called the Urfine Seal! The birds which have already been mentioned as very numerous, chiefly confift of penguins, ducks; petrels, albatroffes, shags, gulls and sea-swall lows. Penguins, which are far superior in number to the rest, are of three kinds, one of which had never been feen by any of our voyagers before. The rocks, or foundations of the hills, are principally composed of that dark blue, and very hard stone, which feems to be one of the most universal productions of nature. Nothing was discovered that had the least appearance of ore or metal *.

From this defolate coast Captain Cook took

VII. 1776.

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 52 - 90.

VII. 1776.

31 Dec.

CHAP, his departure on the thirty-first, intending; agreeably to his instructions to touch next at New Zealand; that he might obtain a recruit of water, take in wood, and make hay for the cattle. Their number was now confiderably diminished; for two young bulls, one of the heifers, two rams, and feveralof the goats, had died while our navigators were employed in exploring Kerguelen's Land. For some time they had fresh gales, and tolerably clear weather. But on the third of January, 1777, the wind veered to the north, where it continued eight days, and was attended with fo thick a fog, that the ships ran above three hundred leagues in the dark. Occasionally the weather would clear up, and give our people a fight of the fun; but this happened very feldom, and was always of short continuance. However, amidst all the darkness produced by the fog, the veffels, though they feldom faw each other, were so fortunate, in consequence of frequently firing guns as fignals, that they did not loofe company. On the twelfth, the northerly winds ended in a calm *. This was fucceeded, in a little time, by a wind from the fouthward, which brought on a rain, that continued for twenty-four hours. At the end of the rain, the wind freshened, and veering to the west and northwest, was followed by fair and clear weather.

Nothing very remarkable occurred to our voya-

3 January.

^{*} The ships were then in latitude 48° 40' fouth, and in longitude 110° 26' east.

ng,

ew

ter,

neir wo

and

raten's

and of

th,

led

ove

lly

eoery

ce. by

aw

nce

did

rly

d,

rd,

or he

h-

72-

ind

gers till the twenty-fourth, when they discover- C H A B. ed the coast of Van Diemen's Land; and, on the twenty-fixth, the ships came to an anchor in Adventure Bay. Captain Cook, as foon as 24 January. he had anchored, ordered the boats to be hoisted out; in one of which he went himself, to look for the most commodious place for obtaining the necessary supplies. Wood and water were found in abundance, and in places sufficiently convenient; but grafs, which was most wanted, was scarce, and, at the same time, very coarfe. Necessity, however, obliged our people to take up with fuch as could be procured.

On the twenty-eighth, the English who were employed in cutting wood were agreeably furprized with a vifit from some of the natives. They confifted of eight men and a boy, who approached our voyagers not only without fear, but with the most perfect confidence and freedom. There was only a fingle person among them who had any thing which bore the least appearance of a weapon, and that was no more than a stick about two feet long, and pointed at one end. These people were quite maked, and wore no kind of ornaments; unless some large punctures or ridges raised in different parts of their bodies, either in strait or curved lines, may be confidered in that light. Most of them had their hair and beards smeared with a red ointment; and the faces of some of them were painted with the same composition. Every present which Captain Cook made them they received without

VII. 1777-

23.

D

th

TE

fu

th

re

a

f

VII. 1777.

CHAP. the least appearance of satisfaction. Of bread and elephant fish, which were offered them, they refused to taste, but shewed that they were fond of birds as an article of food. Two pigs, which the Captain had brought ou shore, having come within their reach, they feized them by the ears, as a dog would have done, and would have carried them off immediately, apparently with no other intention than to kill them. Our Commander being desirous of knowing the use of the stick which one of the Indians had in his hands, he fignified, by figns, his wishes to that purpose. His intimations so far fucceeded, that one of them fet up a piece of wood as a mark, and threw at it, at the distance of about twenty yards. There was but little reason to commend his dexterity; for, after repeated trials, he was still very wide from his object. Omai, to convince the natives how much our weapons were superior to theirs, then fired his musquet at the mark, by which they were fo greatly terrified, that, notwithstanding all the endeavours of the English to quiet their minds, they ran instantly into the woods.

After the retreat of the Indians, Captain Cook, judging that their fears would prevent their remaining near enough to observe what passed, ordered the two pigs, being a boar and a fow, to be carried about a mile within the head of the bay, and faw them left there, by the fide of a fresh-water brook. It was, at first, his benevolent intention to make an additional prefent to Van

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK. 119

Diemen's Land, of a young bull and cow, toge- CHAP. ther with some sheep and goats. But, upon reflection, he laid aside this design; being perfuaded that the natives would destroy them, from their incapacity of entering into his views with regard to the improvement of their country. As pigs are animals which foon become wild, and are fond of the thickest cover of the woods, there was the greater probability of their being preferved. For the accommodation of the other cattle an open place must have been chosen; in which fituation they could not peffibly have been con-

cealed many days.

and

ney

ere

gs,

av-

em

nd

p-

Illi

W-

118

115

ar

of

ce

le

IS

n

On the twenty-ninth, about twenty of the inhabitants, men and boys, joined Captain Cook and fuch of his people as had landed with him, without manifesting the least fign of fear or distrust. It was remarkable, that one of the Indians was confpicuously deformed; nor was he more distinguished by the hump upon his back, than by the drollery of his gestures, and the humour of his speeches, which had the appearance of being intended for the entertainment of our voyagers. Unfortunately, the language in which he fpake to them was wholly unintelligible. To each of the present group the Captain gave a string of beads and a medal, which they feemed to receive with some satisfaction. On iron, and on iron tools, they appeared to fet no value. There was reason to believe that they were even ignorant of fish-hooks; and yet it is difficult to suppose that a people who inhabit a sea-coast, and

VII. 1777.

29 Jan.

14

f

fa

CC

66

CHAP, VII. who were not observed to derive any part of their sustenance from the productions of the ground, should be unacquainted with some mode of catching sish. However, they were never seen to be thus employed; nor was any canoe or vessel discovered by which they could go upon the water. Though they had rejected the kind of sish which had been offered them, it was evident that shell-sish made a part of their food.

After Captain Cook had left the shore, several women and children made their appearance, and were introduced to Lieutenant King by fome of the men that attended them. These females (a Kangooroo skin excepted, which was tied over their shoulders, and seemed to be intended to fupport their infants) were as naked and as black as the men, and had their bodies marked with scars in the same manner. Many of the children had fine features, and were thought to be pretty; but a less favourable report was made of the women, and especially of those who were advanced in years. Some of the gentlemen, however, belonging to the Discovery, as our Commander was informed, paid their addresses, and made liberal offers of presents, which were rejected with great disdain. It is certain that this gallantry was not very agreeable to the men: for an elderly man, as foon as he observed it, ordered the women to retire. The order was obeyed; but, on the part of fome of the females, with the appearance of a little reluctance.

On the present occasion, Captain Cook made fome proper and pertinent reflections, which I

neir

nd,

of

een

ef.

of ent

ral

nd

of

(4

/er

to

ck

th

en

у;

he

n-

r,

er

le d

Y

y

le

,

le

shall deliver in his own words. "This conduct," C HAP. fays he, " of Europeans among Savages, to their " women, is highly blameable; as it creates a " jealoufy in their men, that may be attended " with confequences fatal to the fuccess of the " common enterprize, and to the whole body " of adventurers, without advancing the private " purpose of the individual, or enabling him to " gain the object of his wishes. I believe it has " generally been found, amongst uncivilized " people, that where the women are easy of " access, the men are the first to offer them to " strangers; and that, where this is not the case, " neither the allurement of presents, nor the op-" portunity of privacy, will be likely to have " the defired effect. This observation, I am sure, " will hold good throughout all the parts of the " South Sea where I have been. Why then should " men act fo abfurd a part, as to risk their own " fafety, and that of all their companions, in " pursuit of a gratification which they have no " probability of obtaining?"

While our navigators were at Van Diemen's Land, they were successful in obtaining a plentiful crop of grass for their cattle, and such as was far more excellent than what they had met with at their first going on shore. The quantity collected was judged by the Captain to be sufficient to last till his arrival in New Zealand.

Van Diemen's Land had been visited twice before. That name had been given it by Tasman, who discovered it in 1642; from which time it

VII. 1777.

(P)

CHAP. had escaped all notice of European navigators, till Captain Furneaux touched at it in 1773. It is well known, that it is the fouthern point of New Holland, which is by far the largest island in the world; indeed, fo large an island as almost to deferve the appellation of a continent.

b

u

h

T

V

0 1

tl

ir

C

e

t

While Captain Cook was at this country, he neglected nothing which could promote the knowledge of science and navigation. Here, as every where elfe, he fettled the latitude and longitude of places *; marked the variations of the compass, and recorded the nature of the tides. He corrected, likewife, an error of Captain Furneaux, with respect to the situation of Maria's Islands; on which subject he hath candidly remarked, that his own idea is not the refult of a more faithful, but merely of a fecond examination.

Mr. Anderson, during the few days in which the ships remained in Adventure Bay, exerted his usual diligence in collecting as full an account as could be obtained, in fo short a period of time, of the natural productions and the inhabitants of the country. Little can be faid concerning either the personal activity or genius of the natives. The first they do not feem to possels in any remarkable degree; and, to all appearance, they have less of the last than even the half-animated inhabitants of Terra del Fuego. Their

^{*} Adventure Bay is in the latitude of 43° 22' 20" fouth, and in the longitude of 147° 29' eaft,

S,

It

of

nd

fle

he

he

as

bi

of

1e

p-

of

1-

e

d

h

d

t

f

1777.

not expressing that surprize which might have C H A P. been expected, from their feeing men so much unlike themselves, and things to which they had hitherto been utter strangers; their indifference for the presents of our people; and their general inattention, were sufficient testimonies that they were not endued with any acuteness of understanding. What the ancient poets tell us of Fauns and Satyrs living in hollow trees, is realized at Van Diemen's Land. Some wretched constructions of sticks covered with bark, and which did not deserve the name of huts, were indeed found near the shore; but these seemed only to have been erected for temporary purpofes. The most comfortable habitations of the natives were afforded by the largest trees. These had their trunks hollowed out by fire, to the height of fix or feven feet; and there was room enough in them for three or four persons to fit round a hearth, made of clay. At the fame time, these places of shelter are durable; for the people take care to leave one fide of the tree found, which is sufficient to keep it in luxuriant growth. The inhabitants of Van Diemen's Land are undoubtedly from the fame flock with those of the northern parts of New Holland. Their language indeed, appeared to be different; but how far the difference extended, our voyagers could not have an opportunity of determining. With regard to the New Hollanders in general, there is reason to suppose, that they originally came from the

a

i

fe

fe

V

q

t

te

b

b

I

fe

tl

F

V

n

C

C

e

n d

V

a

F

tl

€

0

f

CHAP. fame place with all the Indians of the South VII. Sea*.

1777. 30 Jan. 12 Feb.

On the thirtieth of January; 1777, Captain Cook failed from Adventure Bay, and on the twelfth of February came to an anchor at his old station of Queen Charlotte's Sound, in New Zealand. Being unwilling to lose any time, he commenced his operations that very afternoon By his order, feveral of the empty water calks - were immediately landed, and a place was begun to be cleared for fetting up the two observatories, and the erection of tents to accommodate a guard, and the rest of the company, whose business might require them to remain on shore. Our navigators had not long been at anchor, before a number of canoes, filled with natives, came alongfide of the fhips. However, very few of them would venture on board; which appeared the more extraordinary, as the Captain was well known to them all, and they could not be infenfible how liberally he had behaved to them on former occasions. There was one man in partr cular, whom he had treated with remarkable kindness, during the whole of his last stay in this place; and yet, neither professions of friendship, nor prefents, could prevail upon him to enter the Refolution.

There was a real cause for this shyness on the part of the New Zealanders. A dreadful event had happened to some of Captain Furneaux's

^{*} Cook , ubi fupra , p. 91 - 116.

uth

ain the

old

ew

he

on. **Iks**

run les,

rd,

es

)ur

ore

me of

ed

rell

en-

on

rti-

ble

his

ip,

er

he

nt 's

crew, while he lay in Queen Charlotte's Sound, CHAP. after he had finally separated from Captain Cook, in the former voyage. Ten men, who had been fent out in the large cutter to gather wild greens for the ship's company, were killed in a skirmish with the natives. What was the cause of the quarrel could not be ascertained, as not one of the company furvived to relate the story. Lieutenant Burney, who was ordered to go in fearch of them, found only fome fragments of their bodies, from which it appeared, that they had been converted into the food of the inhabitants. It was the remembrance of this event, and the fear of its being revenged, which now rendered the New Zealanders fo fearful of entering the English vessels. From the conversation of Omai, who was on board the Adventure when the melancholy affair happened, they knew that it could not be unknown to Captain Cook. The Captain, therefore, judged it necessary to use every endeavour to assure them of the continuance of his friendship, and that he should not disturb them on account of the catastrophe. It was most probably in confequence of this affurance, that they foon laid aside all manner of restraint and distrust.

In the mean while, the operations for refitting the ships, and for obtaining provisions, were carried on with great vigour. For the protection of the party on shore, our Commander appointed a guard of ten marines, and ordered arms for all the workmen; with whom Mr. King,

VII. 1777-

CHAP, and two or three petty officers, constantly remained. A boat was never fent to a confiderable distance without being armed, or without being under the direction of fuch officers as might be depended upon, and who were well acquainted with the natives. In Captain Cook's former visits to this country, he had never made use of fuch precautions; nor was he now convinced of their absolute necessity. But, after the tragical fate of the crew of the Adventure's boat in this found, and of Captain Marion du Fresne, and some of his people, in the Bay of Islands (in 1772), it was impossible to free our navigators from all apprehensions of experiencing a similar calamity.

Whatever fuspicions the inhabitants might at first entertain, that their acts of barbarity would be revenged, they very fpeedily became fo perfeetly easy upon the subject, as to take up their residence close to our voyagers; and the advantage of their coming to live with the English was not inconfiderable. Every day, when the weather would permit, fome of them went out to catch fish, and our people generally obtained, by exchanges, a good share of the produce of their labours, in addition to the Supply which was afforded by our own nets and lines. Nor was there a deficiency of vegetable refreshments; to which was united foruce-beer for drink; fo that if the feeds of the fcurvy had been contracted by any of the crew, they would speedily have been removed by fuch a regimen. The

ly.

fi-

ut

ht

It-

er

of

of

al

is

d

in

rs

ar

at

d

r-

Ir

1-

e

t

r

fact, however, was, that there were only two CHAP.
invalids upon the fick lifts in both ships.

VII.

Curiosities, fish, and women were the articles 1777.

Curiofities, fish, and women were the articles of commerce supplied by the New Zealanders. The two first always came to a good market; but the latter did not happen, at this time, to be an acceptable commodity. Our feamen had conceived a diflike to these people, and were either unwilling or afraid to affociate with them; the good effect of which was, that our Commander knew no instance of a man's quitting his station, to go to the habitations of the Indians. A connexion with women it was out of Captain Cook's power to prevent; but he never encouraged it, and always was fearful of its confequences. Many, indeed, are of opinion, that fuch an intercourse is a great security among favages. But if this should ever be the case with those who remain and settle among them, it is generally otherwise with respect to travellers and transient visiters. In such a fituation as was that of our navigators, a connexion with the women of the natives betrays more men than it faves. "What elfe," fays the Captain, " can " reasonably be expected, fince all their views " are felfish, without the least mixture of regard " or attachment? My own experience, at least, " which hath been pretty extensive, hath not " pointed out to me one instance to the contrary."

Amongst the persons who occasionally visited the English, was a Chief of the name of Kahoora, who, as Captain Cook was informed,

had headed the party that cut off Captain Fur. neaux's people, and had himself killed Mr. VII. ¥777-

Rowe, the Officer who commanded. This man our Commander was strongly solicited to put to death, even by fome of the natives; and Omai was particularly eager and violent upon the fubject. To these solicitations the Captain paid not the least degree of attention. He even admired Kahoora's courage, and was not a little pleafed with the confidence with which he had put himself into his power. Kahoora had placed his whole fafety in the declarations that Captain Cook had uniformly made to the New Zealanders; which were, that he had always been a friend to them all, and would continue to be fo, unless they gave him cause to act otherwise; that as to their inhuman treatment of our people, he should think no more of it, the transaction having happened long ago, and when he was not-present; but that, if ever they made a fecond attempt of the same kind, they might rest assured

of feeling the weight of his refentment.

While our Commander, on the fixteenth, was making an excursion for the purpose of collecting food for his cattle, he embraced the opportunity to enquire, as accurately as possible, into the circumstances which had attended the melancholy fate of our countrymen. Omai was his interpreter on this occasion. The result of the enquiry was, that the quarrel first took its rife from some thefts, in the commission of which the natives were detected; that there was no premeditated

plan

P

n

n

h

fe

0

aı

fr

to

fh

th

a

tv

ol

th

pi

an

hi

C

ho

an

of

fir

pr

W

th

ig

th

to

N

ur.

Ar.

an

to

mai ub-

10t

red

fed

out his

ain

rs; to

efs

as

he

on

ras nd

ed

ras

ng ty

he

ly

er-

ry

ne

ed

plan of bloodshed; and that if these thests had CHAP. not, unfortunately, been too hastily refented, no mischief would have happened. Kahoora's greatest enemies, and even the very men that had most earnestly solicited his destruction, confessed, at the same time, that he had no intention of quarrelling with Captain Furneaux's people, and much less of killing any of them, till the fray had actually commenced.

Captain Cook continued, in this his last visit to New Zealand, the folicitude he had formerly shewn, to be of some essential future service to the country. To one Chief he gave two goats, a male and a female, with a kid; and to another two pigs, a boar and a fow. Although he obtained a promise from both these Chiefs, that they would not kill the animals which had been presented to them, he could not venture to place any great reliance upon their affurances. It was his full intention, on his present arrival in Queen Charlotte's Sound, to have left not only goats and hogs, but sheep, together with a young bull and two heifers. The accomplishment, however, of this refolution depended either upon his finding a Chief who was powerful enough to protect and keep the cattle, or upon his meeting with a place where there might be a probability of their being concealed from those who would ignorantly attempt to destroy them. Neither of these circumstances happened to be conformable to his wishes. At different times he had left in New Zealand ten or a dozen hogs, besides those Vol. II.

VII. 3777. 1777

8

C H A P. which had been put on shore by Captain Furneaux. It will, therefore, be a little extraordinary, if this race of animals should not increase and be preserved, either in a wild or a domestic state, or in both. Our Commander was informed, that Tiratou, a popular Chief among the natives, had a number of cocks and hens, and one fow, in his separate possession. With regard to the gardens which had formerly been planted, though they had almost entirely been neglected, and some of them destroyed, they were not wholly unproductive. They were found to contain cabbages, onions, leeks, pursiain, radishes, mustard, and a few potatoes. The potatoes, which had first been brought from the Cape of Good Hope, were greatly meliorated by change of foil; and, with proper cultivation, would be fuperior to those produced in most other countries.

1

1

A great addition of knowledge was obtained, during this voyage, with respect to the productions of New Zealand, and the manners and customs of its inhabitants. The zeal of Captain Cook upon the subject was admirably seconded by the fedulous diligence of Mr. Anderson, who omitted no opportunity of collecting every kind and degree of information. I shall only so far trespass on the patience of my readers, as to mention a few circumstances tending to delineate the character of the natives. They feem to be a people perfectly fatisfied with the little they already posses; nor are they remarkably curious either in their observations of their enquiries.

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK. 131.

aux.

, if

be

ate,

ed,

res,

W,

the

igh

ind

lly

ain

es,

5, of

ge

be

es.

ł,

0-

d

n

d

0

r

)

New objects are so far from striking them with C H A P. fuch a degree of furprize as might naturally be expected, that they scarcely fix their attention even for a moment. In the arts with which they are acquainted, they flew as much ingenuity, both in invention and execution, as any uncivilized nations under similar circumstances. Without the least use of those tools which are formed of metal, they make every thing that is necessary to procure their fubfishence, clothing, and military weapons; and all this is done by them with a neatness, a strength, and a convenience that are well adapted to the accomplishment of the several purposes they have in view. No people can have a quicker fense of an injury done to them than the New Zealanders, or be more ready to refent it: and yet they want one characteristic of true bravery; for they will take an opportunity of being infolent when they think that there is no danger of their being punished. From the number of their weatpons, and their dexterity in using them, it appears that war is their principal profession. Indeed, their public contentions are fo frequent. or rather so perpetual, that they must live under continual apprehensions of being destroyed by each other. From their horrid custom of eating the flesh of their enemies, not only without reluctance, but with peculiar fatisfaction, it would be natural to suppose that they must be destitute of every humane feeling, even with regard to their own party. This, however, is

17.77

K.2

pa

ne

to

tl

W

W

li

n

77

n

b

V

(

b

t

a

t

VII.

not the case: for they lament the loss of their friends with a violence of expression which argues the most tender remembrance of them. At a very early age, the children are initiated into all the practices, whether good or bad, of their fathers; fo that a boy or girl, when only nine or ten years old, can perform the motions, and imitate the frightful gestures, by which the more aged are accustomed to inspire their enemies with terror. They can keep, likewise, the strictest time in their fong; and it is with some degree of melody that they fing the traditions of their forefathers, their actions in war, and other subjects. The military atchievements of their ancestors the New Zealanders celebrate with the highest pleafure, and spend much of their time in diversions of this fort, and in playing upon a mufical instrument, which partakes of the pature of a flute. With respect to their language, it is far from being harsh or disagreeable, though the pronunciation of it is frequently guttural; nor, if we may judge from the melody of some kinds of their fongs, is it destitute of those qualities which fit it to be affociated with music. Of its Mentity with the languages of the other islands throughout the South Sea fresh proofs were exhibited during the prefent voyage.

At the request of Omai, Captain Cook confented to take with him two youths from New Zealand. That they might not quit their native country under any deluding ideas of visiting it again, the Captain took care to inform their

heir

ues

t a

all

neir ine

and

ore rith

test

ree

neir

cts.

the ea-

ons cal

fa

far

he

or,

nds ies

its

ds

ere

11-

W

ve

it ir

parents, in the strongest terms, that they would CHAP. never return. This declaration feemed, however, to make no kind of impression. The father of the youngest lad refigned him with an indifference which he would fcarcely have shewn at parting with his dog, and even stripped the boy of the little clothing he possessed, delivering him quite naked into the hands of our voyagers. This was not the cafe with the mother of the other youth. She took her leave of him with all the marks of tender affection that might be expected between a parent and a child on fuch an occafion; but she foon resumed her chearfulness, and went away wholly unconcerned *.

On the twenty-fifth of the month, Captain Cook flood out of Queen Charlotte's Sound, and by the twenty-seventh got clear of New Zealand. No fooner had the ships lost fight of the land, than the two young adventurers from that country, one of whom was nearly eighteen years of age, and the other about ten, began deeply to repent of the step they had taken. It was the experience of the fea-fickness which gave this turn to their reflections; and all the foothing encouragement the English could think of, was but of little avail. They wept, both in public and in private, and made their lamentation in a kind of fong, that feemed to be expressive of the praises of their country and people; from which they were to be separated for ever. In

VII. 1777.

September 19 10 to the second second

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 118-163.

in

re

fa

16

0

to

k

C

VII. but as their fea-sickness wore off, and the tumult of their minds subsided, the fits of lamentation became less and less frequent, and at length entirely ceased. By degrees, their native country and their friends were forgotten, and they appeared to be as firmly attached to our navigat-

ors as if they had been born in England.

29 March.

In the profecution of the voyage, Captain Cook met with unfavourable winds; and it was not till the twenty-ninth of March that land was discovered. It was found to be an inhabited island, the name of which, as was learned from two of the natives, who came off in a canoe, is Mangeea. Our Commander examined the coast with his boats, and had a short intercourse with some of the inhabitants. Not being able to find a proper harbour for bringing the ships to an anchorage, he was obliged to leave the country unvifited, though it feemed capable of supplying all the wants of our voyagers. The island of Mangeea is full five leagues in circuit, and of a moderate and pretty equal height*. It has, upon the whole, a pleasing aspect, and might be made a beautiful fpot by cultivation. The inhabitants, who appeared to be both numerous and well fed, feemed to refemble those of Otaheite and the Marquesas in the beauty of their persons; and the resemblance, as far as could be judged

has in our land drown within

^{*} Mangeea lies in the latitude of 21° 57' fouth, and in the longitude of 201° 53' east.

in fo short a compass of time, takes place with CHAP. respect to their general disposition and character.

ays:

mult

tion

igth

atry hey

gat-

ain

Vas vas

nd.

of m-

th

ne.

a

n-

y

From the coast of Mangeea our Commander failed in the afternoon of the thirtieth, and on 30 March. the next day land was again feen, within four leagues of which the ships arrived on the first of April. Our people could then pronounce it to be an island, nearly of the same appearance and extent with that which had so lately been left. Some of the natives speedily put off in their canoes, and three of them were persuaded to come on board the Resolution; on which occasion, their whole behaviour marked that they were quite at their eafe, and felt no kind of apprehension that they should be detained, or ill used. In a visit from several others of the inhabitants, they manifested a dread of approaching near the cows and horses; nor could they form the least conception of their nature. But the sheep and goats did not, in their opinion, furpass the limits of their ideas; for they gave our navigators to understand that they knew them to be birds. As there is not the most diftant refemblance between a sheep or goat, and any winged animal, this may be thought to be almost an incredible example of human ignorance. But it should be remembered, that, excepting hogs, dogs, and birds, these people were strangers to the existence of any other land-animals.

In a farther intercourse with the natives, who had brought a hog, together with fome plantains and cocoa nuts, they demanded a dog from our

VII. 1777.

I April.

he

W

fi

1e

tl

e:

fo

P

tı

fi

(

P

t

P

i

Č

С н а р. УП. voyagers, and refused every thing besides which was offered in exchange. One of the gentlemen on board happened to have a dog and a bitch, which were great nuisances in the ship; and these he might now have disposed of in a manner that would have been of real future utility to the island. But he had no such views in making them the companions of his voyage. Omai, however, with a good-nature that reslects honour upon him, parted with a favourite dog which he had brought from England; and with this acquisition the people departed highly satisfied.

3 April.

On the third of April, Captain Cook dispatched Mr. Gore, with three boats, to endeavour to get upon the island. Mr. Gore himself, Omai, Mr. Anderson, and Mr. Burney, were the only persons that landed. The transactions of the day, of which Mr. Anderson drew up an ingenious and entertaining account, added to the stock of knowledge gained by our navigators, but did not accomplish Captain Cook's principal object. Nothing was procured by the gentlemen, from the island, that supplied the wants of the ships. In this expedition, Omai displayed that turn for exaggeration, with which travellers have fo frequently been charged. Being asked by the natives concerning the English, their ships, their country, and the arms they made use of, his answers were not a little marvellous. He told these people that our country had ships as large as their island; on board which were instruments of war (describing our guns) of fuch dimensions, that several

VII. 1777.

persons might sit within them. At the same time, CHAP. he affured the inhabitants that one of these guns was sufficient to crush their whole island at a fingle shot. Though he was obliged to acknowledge that the guns on board the vessels upon their coast were but small, he contrived, by an explosion of gunpowder, to inspire them with a formidable idea of their nature and effect. It is probable that this representation of things contributed to the preservation of the gentlemen, in their enterprise on shore, for a strong dispofition to retain them had been shewn by the natives.

hich

men

tch.

hele

that

the

ing

ai,

our

rich

this

d.

hed

to

ai,

nly

ay, ous

of

lid

ct.

m

05. or

re-

es y,

re lè

)al

It seemed destined that this day should give Omai more occasions than one of bearing a principal part in its transactions. The island, though never visited by Europeans before, happened to have other strangers residing in it; and it was entirely owing to Omai's having attended on the expedition, that a circumstance so curious came to the knowledge of the English. Scarcely had he been landed upon the beach, when he found, among the crowd which had affembled there, three of his own countrymen, natives of the Society Islands. That at the distance of about two hundred leagues from those islands, an immenfe, unknown ocean intervening, with the wretched boats their inhabitants are known to make use of, and fit only for a passage where light of land is fearcely ever loft, fuch a meeting. at fuch a place, so accidentally visited, should occur, may well be regarded as one of those

VII. 1777.

CHAP. unexpected fituations, with which the writers of felgned adventures love to furprize their readers. When events of this kind really happen in common life, they deserve to be recorded for their fingularity. It may easily be supposed with what mutual furprize and fatisfaction this interview of Omai with his countrymen was attended. Twelve years before, about twenty persons in number, of both fexes, had embarked on board a canoe at Otaheite, to cross over to the neighbouring island of Ulietea. A violent storm having arisen, which drove them out of their course, and their provisions being very scanty, they suffered incredible hardships, and the greatest part of them perished by famine and fatigue. Four men only furvived, when the boat overfet, and then the destruction of this small remnant appeared to be inevitable. However, they kept hanging by the fide of the vessel, which they continued to do for fome days, when they were providentially brought within fight of the people of this island, who immediately fent out canoes, and brought them on shore. The three men who now furvived, expressed a strong sense of the kind treatment they had received; and so well fatisfied were they with their present situation, that they refused an offer which was made them of being conveyed to their native country. A very important instruction may be derived from the preceding narrative. It will ferve to explain, better than a thousand conjectures of speculative reafoners, how the detached parts of the earth,

b

ŋ

h

tl

ir

le

and, in particular, how the islands of the South CHAR. Sea, though lying remote from any inhabited continent, or from each other, may have originally been peopled. Similar adventures have occurred in the history of navigation and shipwrecks.

ers

ers.

meir

nat

of

ve

r,

oe

ng n,

eir re-

m ly

ne

De

10 0

V

-

The island on which Messieurs Gore, Anderfon, Burney and Omai, had landed, is called Wateeoo by the natives, and is a beautiful spot, having a furface composed of hills and plains, which are covered with a verdure rendered extremely pleasant by the diversity of its hues *. Its inhabitants are very numerous; and many of the young men were perfect models in shape; besides which, they had complexions as delicate as those of the women, and appeared to be equally amiable in their dispositions. In their manners, their general habits of life, and their religious ceremonies and opinions, these islanders have a near resemblance to the people of Otaheite and its neighbouring isles; and their language was well understood, both by Omai and the two New Zealanders.

The next place visited by Captain Cook was a small island, called Wennooa-ette, or Otakootaia **, to which Mr. Gore was fent, at the

^{*} Wateeoo lies in the latitude of 20° 1' fouth, and in the longitude of 201° 45' east, and is about fix leagues in circumference.

^{**} It lies in the latitude of 19 15' fouth, and in the lengitude of 201° 37' eaft.

H

2

ſ

VII. cocoa nuts for each ship, and some grass, to1777. gether with a quantity of the leaves and branches
of young trees, for the cattle. Though, at this
time, no inhabitants were found in Wennoaette, yet, as there remained indubitable marks
of its being, at least, occasionally frequented,
Mr. Gore left a hatchet, and several nails, to the
full value of what had been taken away.

5 April.

On the fifth, our Commander directed his course for Harvey's Island, which was only at the distance of fifteen leagues, and where he hoped to procure some refreshments. This island had been discovered by him, in 1773, during his last voyage, when no traces were discerned of its having any inhabitants. It was now experienced to be well peopled, and by a race of men who appeared to differ much, both in person and disposition, from the natives of Wateroo. Their behaviour was diforderly and clamorous; their colour was of a deeper cast; and feveral of them had a fierce and rugged aspect. It was remarkable, that not one of them had adopted the practice, so generally prevalent among the people of the Southern Ocean, of puncturing or tatooing their bodies. But, not withstanding this fingularity, the most unequivocal proofs were exhibited of their having the fame common origin; and their language, in particular, approached still nearer to the dialect of Otaheite, than that of Wateeoo, or Mangeea. No anchorage for the ships being found in

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK. 141

dred, to-

ches

this

noa. arks

ted,

the

his at

he

and ing

ned

ex-

of

in

of

nd

ft;

ed

em

nt

of

ot-

11-

he

in

a

a.

in

Harvey's Island, Captain Cook quitted it with- CHAP. out delay.

1777

The Captain being thus disappointed at all the islands he had met with, fince his leaving New Zealand, and his progress having unavoidably been retarded by unfavourable winds, and other unforefeen circumstances, it became impossible to think of doing any thing this year in the high latitudes of the northern hemisphere, from which he was still at fo great a distance, though the season for his operations there was already begun. In this fituation, it was absolutely necessary, in the first place, to purfue fuch measures as were most likely to preserve the cattle that were on board. A still more capital object was to fave the stores and provisions of the ships, that he might the better be enabled to profecute his discoveries to the north, which could not now be commenced till a year later than was originally intended. If he had been so fortunate as to have procured a fupply of water, and of grass, at any of the islands he had lately visited, it was his purpose to have stood back to the fouth, till he had met with a westerly wind. But the certain consequence of doing this, without fuch a supply, would have been the loss of all the cattle; while, at the same time, not a fingle advantage would have been gained with regard to the grand ends of the voyage. He determined, to bear away for the Friendly Mands, where he was fure of being abundantly provided.

Will to the service had been been a facilities of the service

I

b

C

C

fi

b

in

th

C

th

CO

na Fi

by

by the

m

he

to

thi

pe

ne

Vic

evi

ou

the

C H A P. VII. 1777: 14 April.

In pursuing his course, agreeably to this resolution, our Commander, on the fourteenth. reached Palmerston Island, where, and at a neighbouring iflot, both of which were uninhabited, some little relief was obtained. The boats foon procured a load of scurvy-grass and young cocoa-nut trees, which was a feast for the cattle and the same feast, with the addition of palmcabbage, and the tender branches of the Wharra tree, was continued for feveral days. On the fixteenth, Omai, being on shore with the Captain, caught, with a scoop-net, in a very short time, as much fish as ferved the whole party for dinner, besides sending a quantity to both the ships. Birds, too, and particularly, men-of-wat and tropic birds, were plentifully obtained; for that our navigators had fumptuous entertainment Omai acted as cook upon the occasion. The fill and the birds he dreffed with heated stones, after the manner of his country; and performed the operation with a dexterity and good humour which were greatly to his credit. From the islot before mentioned; twelve hundred cocoanuts were procured, which, being equally divided among the crew, were of great use to them, both on account of the juice and the kernel. There is no water in the islots which are comprehended under the name of Palmerston Mand. If that article could be obtained, and good anchorage could be accomplished within the reef, Captain Cook would prefer this island to any of the uninhabited ones, for the mere

..

purpose of refreshment. The quantity of fish CHAP. that might be caught, would be sufficient; and VII. a ship's company could roam about, unmolested by the petulance of the inhabitants.

1777.

Different opinions have been entertained concerning the formation of the low islands in the great ocean. From the observations which our Commander now made, he was convinced that fuch islands are formed from shoals, or coral banks, and, confequently, that they are always increasing. His reasons for embracing this hypothesis, are related by him, in his Voyage, with

his usual good fense and sagacity.

119

h,

a

12-

ats

ng

le;

m.

rra

he

in,

e,

10

he

at

fo

nt.

fh

S,

ed

ur

he

a.

ly

to

16

h

m

d

in

d

e

After leaving Palmetston's Island, Captain Cook steered to the west, with a view of making the best of his way to Annamooka. During his course, the showers were so copious, that our navigators faved a confiderable quantity of water. Finding that a greater supply could be obtained by the rain, in one hour, than could be gotten by distillation in a month, the Captain laid afide the still, as a thing which was attended with more trouble than profit. At this time, the united heat and moisture of the weather, in addition to the impossibility of keeping the ships dry, threatened to be noxious to the health of our people. It was, however, remarkable, that neither the constant use of falt food, nor the viciffitudes of climate, were productive of any evil effects. Though the only material refreshment our voyagers had received, fince their leaving the Cape of Good Hope, was that which they

VII. as yet, a fingle fick person on board. This 1777. happy situation of things was undoubtedly owing to the unremitting attention of our Commander, in seeing that no circumstance was neglected which could contribute to the preservation of the health of his company *.

28 April.

1 May.

On the twenty-eighth of April, Captain Cook touched at the Island of Komango; and, on the first of May, he arrived at Annamooka. The Ration he took was the very same which he had occupied when he vifited the country three years before; and it was probably, almost in the same place where Talman, the first discoverer of this and fome of the neighbouring islands, anchored in 1643. A friendly intercourse was immediately opened with the natives, and every thing was fettled to the Captain's fatisfaction. He received the greatest civilities from Toobou, the Chief of Annamooka; and Taipa, a Chief from the Island of Komango, attached himself to the English in fo extraordinary a manner, that, in order to be near them in the night, as well as in the day, he had a house brought on men's shoulders, a full quarter of a mile, and placed close to the fhed which was occupied by our party on shore. On the fixth, our Commander was visited by a great Chief from Tongataboo, whose name was Feenou, and who was falfely represented, by Taipa, to be the king of all the Friendly Isles.

f

0

tl

0

C

in

u

fe

k

lil

W

bu

in

fe

W

an

fo

far

to

to

W

as th

Ca

w

go of

In ob

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 167 - 224.

ot, his

ng

er,

ed

of

ok

he

he

ad

ars

me his

ed

ely

ras ed

of

nd

111 be

у,

a

he

re.

as

yc

es.

The only interruption to the harmony which CHAP. subfifted between our people and the natives of Annamooka, arose from the thievish disposition of many of the inhabitants. They afforded frequent opportunities of remarking how expert they were in the business of stealing. Even some of the Chiefs did not think the profession unbecoming their dignity. One of them was detected in carrying a bolt out of the ship, concealed under his clothes; for which Captain Cook fentenced him to receive a dozen lashes, and kept him confined till he had paid a hog for his liberty. After this act of justice, our navigators were no longer troubled with thieves of rank: but their servants, or slaves, were still employed in the dirty work; and upon them a flogging feerned to make no greater impression than it would have done upon the main-mast. When any of them happened to be caught in the act. fo far were their masters from interceding in their favour, that they often advised our gentlemen to kill them. This, however, being a punishment too fevere to be inflicted, they generally escaped without being punished at all; for of the shame, as well as of the pain of corporal chastifement, they appeared to be equally infensible. At length, Captain Clerke invented a mode of treatment. which was thought to be productive of some good effect. He put the thieves into the hands. of the barber, and completely shaved their heads. In consequence of this operation, they became objects of ridicule to their own countrymen; VOL. II.

1777.

fi

b

hi

ar

W

ill

ne

Pe

fo

or

W

ne

W

ale

de

th

66

he

th

ap

te

W

Tal

T

af

in

lay

be

all

VII. were enabled to deprive them of future opportu-

1777. nities for a repetition of their rogueries.

The island of Annamooka being exhausted of its articles of food, Captain Cook proposed, on the eleventh, to proceed directly for Tongataboo. From this resolution, however, he was diverted, at the instance of Feenou, who warmly recommended, in preference to it, an island, or rather a group of islands, called Hapaee, lying to the north-east. There, he assured our voyagers, they could be plentifully supplied with every refreshment, in the easiest manner; and he enforced his advice by engaging to attend them thither in person. Accordingly, Hapaee was made choice of for the next station; and the examination of it became an object with the

Captain, as it had never been visited by any

On the seventeenth, our Commander arrived at Hippaee, where he met with a most friendly reception from the inhabitants, and from Earoupa, the chief of the island. During the whole stay of our navigators, the time was spent in a reciprocation of presents, civilities, and solemnities. On the part of the natives were displayed single combats with clubs, wrestling and boxing matches, semale combatants, dances performed by men, and night entertainments of singing and dancing. The English, on the other hand, gave pleasure to the Indians by exercising the marines, and excited their astonishment by the exhibition of

,

17.

tu-

of

d,

ga.

ras

ly

10

ng

ya.

th

he

em

ras

he

he

ny

ed

lly

oa,

ay

CI-

es.

gle

es,

n,

g.

re

nd

of

CHAP.

VII.

1777-

31 May.

fire works. After curiofity had, on both fides, been sufficiently gratified, Captain Cook applied himself to the examination of Hapaee, Lefooga, and other neighbouring islands. As the ships were returning, on the thirty-first, from these islands to Annamooka, the Resolution was very near running full upon a low fandy ifle, called Pootoo Pootooa, furrounded with breakers. It fortunately happened, that the men had just been ordered upon deck to put the vessel about, and were most of them at their stations; so that the necessary movements were executed not only with judgment, but also with alertness. This alone faved the ship and her company from destruction. "Such hazardous situations," says the Captain, " are the unavoidable companions " of the man who goes upon a voyage of dif-" covery."

During our Commander's expedition to Hapaee, he was introduced to Poulaho, the real king of the Friendly Isles; in whose presence it instantly appeared how groundless had been Feenou's pretensions to that character. Feenou, however, was a Chief of great note and influence. By Poulaho Captain Cook was invited to pass over to Tongataboo, which request he complied with, after he had touched, for two or tree days at Annamooka. In the passage, the Resolution was insensibly drawn upon a large slat, on which lay innumerable coral rocks, of different depths, below the surface of the water. Notwithstanding all the care and attention of our people to keep

L₂

lif

IV.

ra

a

to

to

th

an

W

pe

m

ki

C

ac

T

th

W

K

he

th

ft

th

ha

re

at

ai

of

af

B

21

VII. from striking on one of these rocks. The same event happened to the Discovery; but fortunately, neither of the ships stuck fast, or received any damage.

10 June.

On the tenth of June, Captain Cook arrived at Tongataboo, where the king was waiting for him upon the beach, and immediately conducted him to a small, but neat house, which, he was told, was at his service, during his stay in the island. The house was situated a little within the skirts of the woods, and had a fine large area before it; fo that a more agreeable fpot could not have been provided. Our Commanders arrival at Tongataboo was followed by a fuccession of entertainments, similar to those which had occurred at Hapaee, though somewhat diversified in circumstances, and exhibited with additional splendour. The pleasure, however, of the visit was occasionally interrupted by the thieveries of many of the inhabitants. Nothing could prevent their plundering our voyagers, in every quarter; and they did it in the most daring and infolent manner. There was scarcely any thing which they did not attempt to fteal; and yet, as the crowd was always great, the Captain would not permit the centinels to fire, lest the innocent should fuffer with the guilty.

19 June. .

Captain Cook, on the nineteenth, made a distribution of the animals which he had selected as presents for the principal men of the island. To Poulaho, the king, he gave a young Eng-

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK. 149

1er

me

n-

ed

ed

for

ed

ras

he

he

ea ld

r's

IC-

ch

at

th

г,

10

g

s, ft

1;

e ,

.

a

d

1.

lish bull and cow, together with three goats; to CHAP. Mareewagee, a Chief of confequence, a Cape ram and two ewes *; and to Feenou a horse and a mare. Omai, at the same time, was instructed to represent the importance of these animals, and to explain, as far as he was capable of doing it. the manner in which they should be preserved and treated. Even the generofity of the Captain was not without its inconveniences. It foon appeared that some were diffatisfied with the allotment of the animals; for, next morning, two kids and two turkey-cocks were missing. As our Commander could not suppose that this was an accidental loss, he determined to have them again. The first step he took was to seize on three canoes that happened to be alongfide the ships; after which, he went on shore, and having found the King, his brother, Feenou, and some other Chiefs, he immediately put a guard over them, and gave them to understand, that they must remain under restraint till not only the kid and the turkeys, but the rest of the things which, at different times, had been stolen from our voyagers, should be This bold step of Captain Cook was attended with a very good effect. Some of the articles which had been loft were instantly brought

VII. 1777.

^{*} As none of the natives took the least notice or care of the three sheep allotted to Mareewagee, Captain Cook afterwards ordered them to be carried back to the ships. Besides the animals above-mentioned, he left in the island a young boar, and three young fows, of the English breed; and two rabbits, a buck and a doe.

Fr

m

fer

di

T fa

pr

of

W

25

to

ft

0

u

a

fi

1

1

t

h

a

1

F

t

f

July.

IO.

VII. regard to the remainder; that, in the afternoon, the Chiefs were released. It was a happy circumstance, with respect to this transaction, that it did not abate the future considence of Poulaho and his friends in the Captain's kind and generous treatment.

On the fifth of July was an eclipse of the sun, which, however, in consequence of unfavourable weather, was very imperfectly observed. Happily, the disappointment was of little consequence, as the longitude was more than sufficiently determined by lunar observations *.

Captain Cook failed from Tongataboo on the tenth, and, two days after, came to an anchor at the island of Middleburg, or Eooa, as it is called by the inhabitants. Here he was immediately visited by Taoofa, the Chief with whom he had formerly been acquainted. The intercourse now renewed was friendly in the highest degree, both with Taoofa and the rest of the natives; and our Commander endeavoured to meliorate their condition by planting a pine-apple, and fowing the feeds of melons, and other vegetables, in the Chief's plantation. To this he was encouraged by a proof that his past endeavours had not been wholly unsuccessful. He had, one day, ferved up to him at his dinner, a dish of turnips, being the produce of the feeds which he had left at Eooa in his last voyage.

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 225 - 328.

ith

on,

Cir-

hat

ho

ous

m,

ole

p. ce,

ly

10

15

j.

n

e

The stay which Captain Cook made at the CHAP. Friendly Islands was between two and three months; during which time, some accidental differences excepted, there sublisted the utmost cordiality between the English and the natives. These differences were never attended with any fatal confequences; which happy circumstance was principally owing to the unremitting attention of the Captain, who directed 'all his measures with a view to the prevention of fuch quarrels as would be injurious either to the inhabitants or to his own people. So long as our navigators stayed at the islands, they expended very little of their fea-provisions, subsisting, in general, upon the produce of the country, and carrying away with them a quantity of refreshments sufficient to last till their arrival at another station, where they could depend upon a fresh supply. It was a fingular pleasure to our Commander, that he possessed an opportunity of adding to the happiness of these good Indians, by the useful animals which he left among them. Upon the whole, the advantages of having touched at the Friendly Islands were very great; and Captain Cook reflected upon it with peculiar fatisfaction, that these advantages were obtained without retarding, for a fingle moment, the profecution of the great object of his voyage; the feafon for proceeding to the north having been previously lost.

Besides the immediate benefits which both the natives and the English derived from their mutual

n

th

cl

th

gı

fu

th

ta

h

OL

w

na

an

T

na

re

ex th

ci

fh

60

VII.

intercourse on the present occasion, such a large addition was now made to the geographical knowledge of this part of the Pacific Ocean, as may render no fmall fervice to future navigators. Under the denomination of the Friendly Islands, must be included not only the group at Hapaee, but all those islands that have been discovered nearly under the fame meridian, to the north, as well as fome others, which, though they have never hitherto been feen by any European voyagers, are under the dominion of Tongataboo. From the information which our Commander received, it appears that this Archipelago is very extensive. Above one hundred and fifty islands were reckoned up by the natives, who made use of bits of leaves to ascertain their number; and Mr. Anderfon, with his usual diligence, procured all their names. Fifteen of them are faid to be high or hilly, and thirty-five of them large. Concerning the fize of the thirty-two which were unexplored, it can only be mentioned, that they must be larger than Annamooka, which was ranked amongst the smaller isles. Several, indeed, of those which belong to this latter denomination, are, mere fpots, without inhabitants. Sixty-one of these Isles have their proper places and names marked upon the chart of the Friendly islands, and the sketch of the harbour of Tongataboo, which are given in the Voyage. Captain Cook had not the least doubt but that Prince William's Islands, discovered and so named by Tasman, were comprehended in the lift furnished by the

al

d

e

1-

f

r

natives. He had also good authority for believing, CHAP. that Keppel's and Boscawen's Islands, two of Captain Wallis's discoveries in 1765, were included in the same list; and that they were under the fovereignty of Tongataboo, which is the grand feat of government. It must be left to future navigators to extend the geography of this part of the South Pacific Ocean, by afcertaining the exact fituation and fize of nearly a hundred islands, in the neighbourhood, which our Commander had no opportunity of exploring.

During the present visit to the Friendly Islands, large additions were made to the knowledge which was obtained, in the last voyage, of the natural history and productions of the country, and the manners and customs of its inhabitants. Though it does not fall within the plan of this narrative to enter into a detail of the particulars recorded, I cannot help taking notice of the explanation which Captain Cook has given of the thievish disposition of the natives. It is an explanation which reflects honour upon his fagacity, humanity, and candour; and therefore I shall relate it in his own words: " The only " defect, " fays he, " fullying their character, " that we know of, is a propenfity to thieving; " to which we found those of all ages, and both " fexes, addicted; and to an uncommon degree. " It should, however, be considered, that this " exceptionable part of their conduct feemed to " exist merely with respect to us; for, in their " general intercourse with one another, I had

VII. 1777. VII.

" reason to be of opinion, that thefts do not " happen more frequently (perhaps less fo) than in other countries, the dishonest practices of " whose worthless individuals are not supposed " to authorize any indifcriminate censure on the whole body of the people. Great allowances " should be made for the foibles of these poor " natives of the Pacific Ocean, whose minds we " overpowered with the glare of objects, equally " new to them as they were captivating. Steal-" ing, among the civilized nations of the world, " may well be confidered as denoting a character " deeply stained with moral turpitude, with " avarice unrestrained by the known rules of " right, and with profligacy producing extreme " indigence, and neglecting the means of reliev-" ing it. But at the Friendly and other Islands " which we vilited, the thefts, fo frequently committed by the natives, of what we had " brought along with us, may be fairly traced " to less culpable motives. They seemed to arise " folely from an intense curiosity or desire to " possess something which they had not been " accustomed to before, and belonging to a fort " of people so different from themselves. And, " perhaps, if it were possible, that a set of beings, " feemingly as fuperior in our judgment, as we " are in theirs, should appear amongst us, it " might be doubted, whether our natural regard " to justice would be able to restrain many from " falling into the same error. That I have affign-" ed the true motive for their propenfity to

€6

M

pr

an fu

W

ov T

gr Ze

hu

M

tha

fan

pro

ob

the

ind

"this practice, appears from their stealing every C H A P.

"thing indiscriminately at first sight, before they VII.

"could have the least conception of converting 1777.

"their prize to any one useful purpose. But, I believe, with us, no person would forfeit his reputation, or expose himself to punishment, without knowing, before hand, how to employ

" the stolen goods. Upon the whole, the pil-" fering disposition of the islanders, though " certainly disagreeable and troublesome to " strangers, was the means of affording us

" fome information as to the quickness of their

" intellects. "

n

f

d

e

25

r

e

1-

75

of

10

V.

ds ly

ad

b

fe

to

en

rt

d,

5,

ve

it

rd

m

n-

to

With respect to the religion of these Indians, Mr. Anderson maintains, that they have very proper fentiments concerning the immateriality and immortality of the foul; and thinks himself fufficiently authorized to affert, that they do not worship any thing which is the work of their own hands, or any visible part of the creation. The language of the Friendly Islands has the greatest imaginable conformity with that of New Zealand, of Wateeoo, and Mangeea. Several . hundreds of the words of it were collected by Mr. Anderson; and, amongst these, are terms that express numbers reaching to a hundred thoufand. Beyond this limit they never went, and probably were not able to go farther; for it was observed, that when they had gotten thus far, they commonly used a word which expresses an indefinite number.

It is scarcely necessary to add, that Captain

VII. Islands, neglected nothing which could be the subject of astronomical and nautical observation. Hence the latitude and longitude of the different places he touched at, the variations of the needle, and the state of the tides, are recorded for the improvement of science, and the benefit of suture navigators *.

17 July.

21. 8 August. On the seventeenth of July, our Commander took his final leave of the Friendly Islands, and resumed his voyage. An eclipse was observed in the night between the twentieth and the twenty-first; and on the eighth of August, land was discovered. Some of the inhabitants, who came off in canoes, seemed earnestly to invite our people to go on shore; but Captain Cook did not think proper to run the risk of losing the advantage of a fair wind, for the sake of examining an island which appeared to be of little consequence. Its name, as was learned from the natives, who spake the Otaheite language, is Toobouai †.

12.

Pursuing his course, the Captain reached Otaheite on the twelfth, and steered for Oheitepeha Bay, with an intention to anchor there, in order to draw what refreshments he could from the south-east part of the island, before he went down to Matavai. Omai's first reception amongst

* Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 355. 359. 367. — 370. 385, 386. 404, 405. 414 — 421.

[†] Toobouai is situated in the latitude of 23° 25' south, and in the longitude of 210° 37' east. Its greatest extent is not above five or six miles.

e

n.

nt

e,

ne

re

er

nd

he t;

0-

ın

to

of

nd

10

er

ne

ft

0.

h,

his countrymen was not entirely of a flattering nature. Though feveral persons came on board who knew him, and one of them was his brother-in-law, there was nothing remarkably tender or striking in their meeting. An interview which Omai had, on the thirteenth, with his sister, was agreeable to the seelings of nature; for their meeting was marked with expressions of tender affection, more easy to be conceived than described. In a visit, likewise, which he received from an aunt, the old lady threw herself at his seet, and plentifully bedewed them with tears of joy.

Captain Cook was informed by the natives, that, fince he was last at the island, in 1774, two ships had been twice in Oheitepeha Bay, and had lest animals in the country. These, on farther enquiry, were found to be hogs, dogs, goats, one bull, and a ram. That the velsels which had visited Otaheite were Spanish, was plain from an inscription that was cut upon a wooden cross, standing at some distance from the front of a house which had been occupied by the strangers. On the transverse part of the cross was inscribed,

rois was interibed,

Christus vinxit.

And on the perpendicular part, a serious to

Carolus III. imperat. 1774.

Thursday official policy

Our Commander took this occasion to preserve

C H A P. VII.

13 August.

P

tl

1

d

ne

in

er

to

ne

ex

cu

ge

in

in

nit

th

ye

He

ftr

wi

en

the

fio

tia.

WC

rat

fpi

wa

wh

COL

VII by inscribing, on the other side of the post,

1777.

Georgius tertius Rex,

Annis 1767,

1769, 1773, 1774, & 1777.

Whatever might be the intentions of the Spaniards in their visits to the island, it ought to be remembered to their honour, that they had behaved fo well to the inhabitants, as always to be spoken of in the strongest expressions of esteem and veneration.

Captain Cook had at this time an important affair to settle. As he knew that he could now be furnished with a plentiful supply of cocoa nuts, the liquor of which is an excellent and wholesome beverage, he was desirous of prevailing upon his people to confent to their being abridged, during their stay at Otaheite and the neighbouring islands, of their stated allowance of spirits to mix with water. But as this stoppage of a favourite article, without affigning some reason for it, might occasion a general murmur, he thought it most prudent to affemble the ship's company, and to make known to them the defign of the voyage, and the extent of the future operations. To animate them in undertaking with chearfulnels and perseverance what lay before them, he took notice of the rewards offered by Parliament, to fuch of his Majesty's subjects as should first difcover a communication between the Atlantic and

Pacific Oceans, in any direction whatever, in the northern hemisphere; and also to such as should first penetrate beyond the eighty - ninth degree of northern latitude. The Captain made no doubt, he told them, that he should find them willing to co - operate with him in attempting, as far as might be possible, to become entitled to one or both of these rewards; but that to give the best chance of success, it would be necessary to observe the utmost economy in the expenditure of the stores and provisions, particularly the latter, as there was no probability of getting a fupply, any where, after leaving these islands. He strengthened his argument by reminding them, that, in consequence of the opportunity's having been lost of getting to the north this fummer, the voyage must last at least a year longer than had originally been supposed. He entreated them to consider the various obstructions and difficulties they might still meet with, and the aggravated hardships they would endure, if it should be found necessary to put them to short allowance, of any species of provifions, in a cold climate. For these very substantial reasons, he submitted to them, whether it would not be better to be prudent in time, and, rather than to incur the hazard of having no spirits left, when such a cordial would most be wanted, to confent to give up their grog now, when so excellent a liquor as that of cocoa-nuts could be substituted in its place. In conclusion,

ds

m-

ed

en nd

ant

ts,

me

d,

ur.

to

ur-

it,

it

y,

the

ns.

ress

ok

to

dif-

CHAB, VII.

b

a

a

fa

b

d

fu

h

h

0

ti

ir

CI

C

th

CHAP, our Commander left the determination of the VII. matter entirely to their own choice.

1777.

This speech, which certainly partook much of the nature of true eloquence, if a discourse admirably calculated for perfuasion be entitled to that character, produced its full effect on the generous minds of English seamen. Captain Cook had the fatisfaction of finding, that his propofal did not remain a fingle moment under confideration; being unanimously and immediately approved of, without the least objection. By our Commander's order, Captain Clerke made the fame proposal to his people; to which they, likewife, agreed. Accordingly, grog was no longer ferved, excepting on Saturday nights; when the companies of both ships had a full allowance of it, that they might drink the healths of their friends in England.

24 August.

On the twenty-fourth, Captain Cook quitted the fouth-east part of Otaheite, and resumed his old station in Matayai Bay. Immediately upon his arrival, he was visited by Otoo, the king of the whole island, and their former friendship was renewed; a friendship which was continued without interruption, and cemented by a perpetual succession of civilities, good offices, and entertainments. One of our Commander's first objects was to dispose of all the European animals which were in the ships. Accordingly, he conveyed to Oparre, Otoo's place of residence, a peacock and hen; a turkey cock and hen; one gander, and three geese; a drake, and sour ducks. The

VII.

1777.

geese and ducks began to breed before our navi- CHAP. gators left their present station. There were already at Otoo's, feveral goats, and the Spanish bull; which was one of the finest animals of the kind that was ever feen. To the bull Captain Cook fent the three cows he had on board, together with a bull of his own; to all which were added the horse and mare, and the sheep that had still remained in the vessels.

the

ich.

rfe

to

the

ok

fal

ra-

V.

our

he

у,

no

ts;

ull

hs

ed

115

on of

as

h-

al

er-

15

h

to

k

r,

10

The Captain found himself lightened of a very heavy burthen, in having disposed of these passengers. It is not easy to conceive the trouble and vexation which had attended the conveyance of this living cargo, through fuch various hazards, and to so immense a distance. But the fatisfaction which our Commander felt, in having been so fortunate as to fulfil his Majesty's humane defigns, in fending fuch valuable animals, to fupply the wants of two worthy nations, afforded him an ample recompense for the many anxious hours he had passed, before this subordinate object of his voyage could be carried into execution.

At this time a war was on the point of breaking out, between the inhabitants of Eimeo and those of Otaheite; and by the latter Captain. Cook was requested to take a part in their favour. With this request, however, though enforced by frequent and urgent folicitations, the Captain, according to his usual wisdom, refused to comply. He alledged, that, as he was not thoroughly acquainted with the dispute, and the

VUL. II.

VII.

❽

people of Eimeo had never offended him, he could not think himself at liberty to engage in hostilities against them. With these reasons Otoo and most of the Chiess appeared to be satisfied; but one of them, Towha, was so highly displeased, that our Commander never afterward reconstructed his friendship.

vered his friendship. Upon the present occasion Captain Cook had full and undeniable proof that the offering of human facrifices forms a part of the religious inflitutions of Otaheite. Indeed, he was a witness to a folemnity of this kind; the process of which he has particularly described, and has related it with the just fentiments of indignation and ab horrence. The unhappy victim, who was now offered to the object of worship, seemed to be a middle-aged man, and was faid to be one of the lowest class of the people. But the Captain could not learn, after all his enquiries, whether the wretch had been fixed upon, on account of his having committed any crime which was supposed to be deserving of death. It is certain that a choice is generally made either of fuch guilty persons for the facrifices, or of common, low fellows, who stroll about, from place to place, without any visible methods of obtaining an honest sublistence. Those who are devoted to fuffer, are never apprized of their fate till the blow is given that puts an end to their being. Whenever, upon any particular emergency, one of the great Chiefs considers a human facrifice to be necessary, he pitches upon the victim, and fh pe fin

th

ki

car ou ſku wł

It Iku Iini bee

1

ext

tha flan had Frie of l won

iny locie the may othe

rue cerei com

1777.

then orders him to be fuddenly fallen upon and CHAP. killed, either with clubs or stones. Although it should be supposed, that no more than one person is ever devoted to destruction on any fingle occasion, at Otaheite, it will still be found that these occurrences are so frequent, as to cause a shocking waste of the human race; for our Commander counted no less than forty-nine skulls of former victims, lying before the Morai where he had feen another added to the number. It was apparent, from the freshness of these kulls, that no great length of time had elapsed, fince the wretches to whom they belonged had been offered upon the altar of blood.

he in

00

d;

ea.

00.

ad

of fti.

to ch

it

ab.

WC e a

the

uld

the his

fed

2

lty

wo ce,

an to

the

ng.

one

to and

There is reason to fear, that this custom is as. extensive as it is horrid. It is highly probable that it prevails throughout the widely diffused stands of the Pacific Ocean; and Captain Cook had particular evidence of its subsisting at the Friendly Islands. To what an extent the practice of human facrifices was carried in the ancient world, is not unknown to the learned. Scarcely my nation was free from it in a certain state of ociety; and, as religious reformation is one of the last efforts of the human mind, the practice may be continued, even when the manners are otherwise far removed from savage life. It may have been a long time before civilization has made such a progress as to deprive superstition of its truelty, and to divert it from barbarous rites to ceremonies, which, though foolish enough, are comparatively mild; gentle, and innocent,

VII. 1777. 5 Sept. On the fifth of September, an accident hap pened, which, though flight in itself, was of some consequence from the situation of things. A young ram of the Cape breed, which had been lambed and brought up with great care on board the ship, was killed by a dog. Desirous as Captain Cook was of propagating so useful a race, among the Society Islands, the loss of a ram was a serious missfortune. It was the only one he had of that breed; and of the English breed a single ram was all that remained.

Captain Cook and Captain Clerke, on the fourteenth, mounted on horseback, and took ride round the plain of Matavai, to the great furprize of a large number of the natives, who attended upon the occasion, and gazed upon the gentlemen with as much aftonishment as if they had been Centaurs. What the two Captains had begun, was afterwards repeated every day, by one and another of our people; notwithstanding which, the curiofity of the Otaheitans still continued unabated. They were exceedingly de lighted with these animals, after they had feen the use which was made of them. Not all the povelties, put together, which European visiters had carried amongst the inhabitants, inspired them with so high an idea of the greatness of distant nations.

Though Captain Cook would not take a part in the quarrels between the islands, he was ready to protect his particular friends, when in danger of being injured. Towha, who commanded the hii Oi ba

ed

th

63

fu

fu

be

le

0

in

ed

an fu

fre of de

thi bo cui

flo Be the

be

the cra

expedition against Eimeo, had been obliged to fubmit to a difgraceful accommodation. Being full of refentment on account of his not having been properly supported, he was faid to have threatened, that, as foon as the Captain should leave the island, he would join his forces to those of Tiaraboo, and attack Otoo at Matavai or Oparre. This induced our Commander to declare, in the most public manner, that he was determined to espouse the interest of his friend, against any fuch combination; and that whoever prefumed to affault him, should feel the weight of his heavy displeasure, when he returned again to Otaheite. Captain Cook's declaration had probably the defired effect; for, if Towha had formed hostile intentions, no more was heard of

hap.

s of

. A

Deen

Dard Cap-

ace,

Was

had

ngle

the

k a

reat

who

the hey

had

by

ling

con-

de

een

the

ters

red

part

ady

ger

the

The manner in which our Commander was freed from a rheumatic complaint, that confifted of a pain extending from the hip to the foot, deserves to be recorded. Otoo's mother, his three fisters, and eight other women, went on board for the express purpose of undertaking the cure of his disorder. He accepted of their friendly offer, had a bed spread for them on the cabbin floor, and submitted himself to their directions. Being desired to lay himself down amongst them, then, as many of them as could get round him began to squeeze him with both hands, from head to foot, but more particularly in the part where the pain was lodged, till they made his bones crack, and his sless became a perfect mummy.

C H A P. VII.

fe

ar

0

le

W

th

th

in

g

ac

be

b

C

th

fa

fr

at

W

tl

tl

C

tl

e

n

F

CHAP. VII. After undergoing this discipline about a quarter of an hour, he was glad to be released from the women. The operation, however, gave him immediate relief; so that he was encouraged to submit to another rubbing down before he went to bed; the consequence of which was, that he was tolerably easy all the succeeding night. His semale physicians repeated their prescription the next morning, and again in the evening; after which his pains were entirely removed, and the cure was perfected. This operation, which is called Romee, is universally practised among these islanders; being sometimes performed by the men, but more generally by the women.

27 Sept.

Captain Cook, who now had come to the resolution of departing soon from Otaheite, accompanied, on the twenty feventh, Otoo to Oparre, and examined the cattle and poultry, which he had configned to his friend's care at that place. Every thing was in a promising way, and properly attended. The Captain procured from Otoo four goats; two of which he defigned to leave at Ulietea, where none had as yet been introduced; and the other two he proposed to reserve for the use of any islands he might chance to meet with in his passage to the north. On the next day, Otoo came on board, and informed our Commander, that he had gotten a canoe, which he defired him to carry home, as a prefent to the Earee rahie no Pretane. This, he faid, was the only thing he could fend which was worthy of his Majesty's acceptance. Captain Cook was not a little pleaarter

the

im.

to

vent

t he His

the

fter

the

1 is

refe

en.

the

m-

re,

he

ce.

ro-

00

at

d;

he

th

7,

d-

d

ie

e

S

2.

fed with Otoo, for this mark of his gratitude; CHAP. and the more, as the thought was entirely his own. Not one of our people had given him the least hint concerning it; and it shewed that he was fully fenfible to whom he stood indebted for the most valuable presents that he had received. As the canoe was too large to be taken on board, the Captain could only thank him for his good intentions; but it would have given him a much greater fatisfaction if his prefent could have been accepted.

During this visit of our voyagers to Otaheite, fuch a cordial friendship and confidence sublisted between them and the natives, as never once to be interrupted by any untoward accident. Our Commander had made the Chiefs fully fenfible, that it was their interest to treat with him on fair and equitable terms, and to keep their people from plundering or stealing. So great was Otoo's attachment to the English, that he seemed pleased with the idea of their having a permanent fettlement at Matavai; not confidering that from that time he would be deprived of his kingdom, and the inhabitants of their liberties. Captain Cook had too much gratitude and regard for these islanders, to wish that such an event should ever take place. Though our occasional visits may, in some respects, have been of advantage to the natives, he was afraid that a durable establishment among them, conducted as most European establishments amongst Indian nations have unfortunately been, would give them just

VII. 17770

M 4

be

re

tic

in

fp

fu

OI

fr

ha

gr

W

th

W

fe

W

m

di

of

W

th

d

 $\mathbf{f}_{\mathbf{c}}$

h

h

tl

11

n

f

f

V

VII. by our navigators. It is not, indeed, likely that 1777. a measure of this kind should at any time seriously be adopted, because it cannot serve either the purposes of public ambition, or private avarice; and, without such inducements, the Captain has ventured to pronounce that it will never be undertaken.

30 Sept.

From Otaheite our voyagers failed, on the thirtieth, to Eimeo, where they came to an anchor, on the same day. At this island, the transactions which happened were, for the most part, very unpleafant. A goat, which was Rolen, was recovered without any extraordinary difficulty, and one of the thieves was, at the same time, surrendered; being the first instance of the kind that our Commander had met with in his connexions with the Society Islands. The stealing of another goat was attended with an uncommon degree of perplexity and trouble. As the recovery of it was a matter of no fmall importance, Captain Cook was determined to effect this at any rate; and accordingly he made an expedition cross the island, in the course of which he set fire to six or eight houses, and burnt a number of war canoes. At last, in confequence of a peremptory message to Maheine, the Chief of Eimeo, that not a fingle canoe should be left in the country, or an end be put to the contest, unless the animal in his possession should be restored, the goat was brought back. This quarrel was as much regretted on the part of the Captain, as it could

be on that of the natives. It grieved him to CHAP. reflect, that, after refusing the pressing solicitations of his friends at Otaheite to favour their . 1777. invasion of this island, he should find himself so fpeedily reduced to the necessity of engaging in fuch hostilities as perhaps, had been more injurious to them than Towha's expedition.

red hat

eriner

ate

the

rill

IIr-

or,

ons

ın-

er-

ne d; |

m-

th

at

er-

28

ok

nd

he

X

a.

ry

at

7,

11at

h d

On the eleventh of October, the ships departed from Eimeo, and the next day arrived at Owharre harbour, on the west side of Huaheine. grand business of our Commander at this island was the fettlement of Omai. In order to obtain the consent of the Chiefs of the island, the affair was conducted with great folemnity. Omai dreffed himself very properly on the occasion; brought with him a fuitable affortment of prefents; went through a variety of religious ceremonies; and made a fpeech, the topics of which had been dictated to him by our Commander. The refult of the negociation was, that a spot of ground was affigned him, the extent of which, along the shore of the harbour, was about two hundred yards; and its depth, to the foot of the hill, fomewhat more. A proportionable part of the hill was included in the grant. This business having been adjusted in a fatisfactory manner, the carpenters of both ships were employed in building a small house for Omai, in which he might secure his European commodities. At the fame time, some of the English made a garden for his use, in which they planted shaddocks, vines, pine-apples, melons, and the feeds of

11 OA:

CHAP. feveral other vegetable articles. All of these VII. Captain Cook had the satisfaction of seeing in a 1777. flourishing state before he left the island.

At Huaheine Omai found a brother, a fister. and a brother-in-law, by whom he was received with great regard and tenderness. But though these people were faithful and affectionate in their attachment to him, the Captain discovered, with concern, that they were of too little consequence in the island to be capable of rendering him any positive service. They had not either authority or influence to protect his person or property; and, in such a situation, there was reason to apprehend, that he might be in danger of being stripped of all his possessions, as soon as he should cease to be supported by the power of the English. To prevent this evil, if possible, our Commander advised him to conciliate the favour and engage the patronage and protection of two or three of the principal Chiefs, by a proper distribution of some of his moveables; with which advice he prudently complied. Captain Cook, however, did not entirely trust to the operations of gratitude, but had recourse to the more forcible motive of intimidation. With this view, he took every opportunity of fignifying to the inhabitants, that it was his intention to return to the island again, after being absent the usual time, and that, if he did not find Omai in the same state of security in which he left him, all those whom he should then discover to have been his enemies should feel the weight of his refentment. As the natives had now formed an

P

V

h

1

it

tl

C

'n

V

0

11

C

a

it

W

li

p

d

VII.

opinion that their country would be vifited by CHAP. the ships of England at stated periods, there was ground to hope that this threatening declaration 17774

would produce no inconsiderable effect.

efe

a

r, ed

gh

ın

d,

n-

ng

er

or

as

er

n

er

e,

ic

n

a

}-

e.

e

is

0 n

1

e

e

S

1

When Omai's house was nearly finished, and many of his moveables were carried ashore, a box of toys excited the admiration of the multitude in a much higher degree than articles of a more useful nature. With regard to his pots, kettles, dishes, plates, drinking-mugs, glasses, and the whole train of domestic accommodations, which in our estimation are so necessary and important, scarcely any one of his countrymen would condescend to look upon them. Omai himself, being sensible that these pieces of English furniture would be of no great consequence in his present situation, wisely fold a number of them, among the people of the ships, for hatches, and other iron tools, which had a more intrinsic value in this part of the world, and would give him a more distinguished superiority over those with whom he was to pass the remainder of his days.

Omai's family, when he fettled at Huaheine. consisted of eight or ten persons, if that can be called a family, to which a fingle female did not as yet belong, nor was likely to belong, unless its master should become less volatile. There was nothing in his present temper which seemed likely to dispose him to look out for a wife; and, perhaps, it is to be apprehended, that his refidence in England had not contributed to improve

VII. with seme woman of his own country.

1777.

The European weapons of Omai confifted of a musquet, bayonet, and cartouch-box; a fowling - piece; two pair of pistols; and two or three fwords or cutlasses. With the possession of these warlike implements, he was highly delighted; and it was only to gratify his eager defire for them; that Captain Cook was induced to make him fuch prefents. The Captain would other. wife have thought it happier for him to be without fire-arms, or any European weapons, left an imprudent use of them (and prudence was not his most diftinguished talent) should rather encrease his dangers than establish his superiority. Though it was no small fatisfaction to our Commander to reflect, that he had brought Omai fafe back to the very fpot from which he had been taken, this fatisfaction was, nevertheless, somewhat diminished by the consideration, that his fituation might now be less desirable than it was before his connexion with the English. It was to be feared, that the advantages which he had derived from his visit to England would place him in a more hazardous state with respect to his personal fafety.

1

1

Whatever faults belonged to Omai's character, they were overbalanced by his good-nature and his gratitude. He had a tolerable share of understanding, but it was not accompanied with application and perseverance; so that his know-ledge of things was very general, and in most

C H A P. VII.

instances imperfect; nor was he a man of much observation. He would not, therefore, be able to introduce many of the arts and customs of England among his countrymen, or greatly to improve those to which they have long been habituated. Captain Cook, however, was confident that he would endeavour to bring to perfection the fruits and vegetables which had been planted in his garden. This of itself would be no small acquisition to the natives. But the greatest benefit which these islands are likely to receive from Omai's travels, will be in the animals that are left upon them; and which, had it not been for his coming to England, they might probably never have obtained. When these multiply, of which Captain Cook thought there was little reason to doubt, Otaheite, and the Society Islands, will equal, if not exceed, any country in the known world, for plenty of provisions.

Before our Commander failed from Huaheine, he had the following inscription cut on the out

fide of Omai's house:

ion

of

W-

ree

efe

ed;

for

ke

er-

th-

est

vas

er

ty.

m-

afe

en

nehis

as

ras

ad

ce

to

r,

nd

nth

W-

of

Georgius Tertius, Rex, 2 Novembris, 1777.

Naves

Refolution, Jac. Cook, Pr.

Discovery, Car. Clerke, Pr.

On the same day, Omai took his final leave of our navigators, in doing which he bade sarewell to all the officers in a very affectionate manner. He sustained himself with a manly resolution till he came to Captain Cook, when his utmost es-

2 Nov

1

ŀ

h

VII.

forts to conceal his tears failed; and he continued to weep all the time that the boat was conveying him to shore. Not again to resume the subject, I shall here mention, that when the Captain was at Ulietea, a fortnight after this event, Omai fent two men with the fatisfactory intelligence, that he remained undisturbed by the people of Huaheine, and that every thing fucceeded well with him, excepting in the lofs of his goat, which had died in kidding. This intelligence was accompanied with a request that another goat might be given him, together with two axes. Our Commander esteeming himself happy in having an additional opportunity of ferving him, dispatched the messengers back with the axes, and a couple of kids, male and female, which were spared for him out of the Discovery.

The fate of the two youths who had been brought from New Zealand must not be forgotten. As they were extremely desirous of continuing with our people, Captain Cook would have carried them to England with him, if there had appeared the most distant probability of their ever being restored to their own country. Tiarooa, the eldest of them, was a very well-disposed young man, with strong natural sense, and a capacity of receiving any instruction. He seemed to be fully convinced of the inseriority of New Zealand to these islands, and resigned himself, though not without some degree of reluctance, to end his days, in ease and plenty, in Huaheine. The other had formed so strong an attachment

to our navigators, that it was necessary to take CHAP. him out of the ship; and carry him ashore by force. This necessity was the more painful, as he was a witty, fmart boy; and, on that account, a great favourite on board. Both these youths became a part of Omai's family.

ued

ey-

the

the

this

ory the

iic-

of in-

hat

ith

[elf

of .

th le,

y.

en

t-

u-

7e

d

ir 1-

ſ.

d

d

V

Whilst our voyagers were at Huaheine, the atrocious conduct of one particular thief occasion ed so much trouble, that the Captain punished him more feverely than he had ever done any culprit before. Besides having his head and beard shaved, he ordered both his ears to be cut off, and then dismissed him. It can scarcely be reflected upon without regret, that our Commander should have been compelled to fuch an act of feverity.

On the third of November, the ships came to an anchor in the harbour of Ohamaneno, in the island of Ulietea. The observatories being set up on the fixth, and the necessary instruments having been carried on shore, the two following days were employed in making astronomical observations. In the night between the twelfth and thirteenth, John Harrison, a marine, who was sentinel at the observatory, deferted, taking with him his arms and accoutrements. Captain Cook exerted himself, on this occasion, with his usual vigour. He went himself in pursuit of the deserter, who, after some evasion on the part of the inhabitants, was furrendered. He was found fitting between two women, with the musquet lying before him; and all the defence he was able to make was, that he had been enticed away by the natives.

VII. 1777.

3 Nov.

6.

13.

fta

de

ou

bei

and

he

we

tha

oui

the

fur

anf

the

con

ho

tha

he

este

bac

be

refo Cap

as 1

ing

oth

that

ceed

our

zeal

for Bol

CHAP. As this account was probably the truth, and as it appeared besides, that he had remained upon VII. his post till within ten minutes of the time when 1777. he was to have been relieved, the punishment which the Captain inflicted upon him was not very fevere.

Some days after, a still more troublesome affair happened, of the same nature. On the morning of the twenty-fourth, the Captain was informed that a midshipman, and a seaman, both belong ing to the Discovery, were missing; and it som appeared that they had gone away in a canoe, in the preceding evening, and had now reached the other end of the island. As the midshipman was known to have expressed a desire of remaining at these islands, it was evident that he and his companion had gone off with that intention Though Captain Clerke immediately fet out in quest of them, with two armed boats, and party of marines, his expedition proved fruitles, the natives having amused him the whole day with false intelligence. The next morning an account was brought that the deferters were at Otaha. As they were not the only persons in the ships who wished to spend their days at these favourite islands, it became necessary, for the purpose of preventing any farther desertion, to recover them at all events. Captain Cook, therefore, in order to convince the inhabitants that he was in earnest, resolved to go after the fugitives himself; to which measure he was determined, from having observed, in repeated in flances,

as

on

ien

ent

101

fair

ng

red

ng.

oon oe,

red

nan

in-

on.

in da

efs,

lay

an

at in

eſe

he to

k,

nts

the

de-

in-

stances, that the natives had feldom offered to CHAP. deceive him with false information.

Agreeably to this refolution, the Captain fet 1777. out, the next morning, with two armed boats, being accompanied by Oreo, the Chief of Ulietea. and proceeded immediately to Otaha. But when he had gotten to the place where the deferters were expected to be found, he was acquainted that they were gone over to Bolabola. Thither our Commander did not think proper to follow them, having determined to purfue another meafure, which he judged would more effectually answer his purpose. This measure was, to put the Chief's fon, daughter, and fon-in-law, into confinement, and to detain them till the fugitives hould be restored. As to Oreo, he was informed, that he was at liberty to leave the ship whenever he pleased, and to take such methods as he esteemed best calculated to get our two men back; that, if he succeeded, his friends should be released; if not, that Captain Cook was resolved to carry them away with him. The Captain added, that the Chief's own conduct, as well as that of many of his people, in affifting the runaways to escape, and in enticing others to follow them, would justify any step that could be taken to put a stop to such proceedings. In consequence of this explanation of our Commander's views and intentions. Oreo zealously exerted himself to recover the deserters; for which purpose he dispatched a canoe to Bolabola, with a meffage to Opoony, the fover-VOL.II.

th

ti

it

av

ca

to

CC

C

to

la

u

ap

W

th

gi

fu

qu

ar

of

ag

0

in

O

C

g

fr

cl

fc

to

f

p

ft

CHAP. eign of that island, acquainting him with what had happened, and requesting him to seize the two fugitives, and fend them back. The meffen. ger, who was no less a person than the father of Pootoe, Oreo's fon-in-law, came, before he fet out, to Captain Cook, to receive his commands: which were, not to return without the runa. ways, and to inform Opoony, that, if they had lest Bolabola, he must dispatch canoes in pursuit of them, till they should finally be restored. These vigorous measures were, at length, successful. On the twenty-eighth, the deferters were

officer from being lost to his country. While this affair was in suspense, some of the natives, from their anxiety on account of the confinement of the Chief's relations, had formed a design of a very serious nature; which was no less than to feize upon the persons of Captain Clerke and Captain Cook. With regard to Captain Clerke, they made no fecret of speaking of their scheme, the day after it was discovered. But their first and grand plan of operations was to lay hold of Captain Cook. It was his custom to bathe, every evening, in fresh water; in doing which he frequently went alone, and always without arms. As the inhabitants expected him to go, as usual, on the evening of

brought back; and; as foon as they were on

board, the three prisoners were released. Our

Commander would not have acted fo refolutely

on the prefent occasion, had he not been pecu-

liarly folicitous to fave the fon of a brother

nat

he

en-

of

fet

ls;

na-

ad

uit

ed.

uc-

ere

on

)ur

ely

cu-

her

he

he

ed

no

alli

ap.

of

ed.

ras.

m

111

nd

X

of

the twenty-fixth, they had determined at that CHAP. time to make him a prisoner. But he had thought it prudent, after confining Oreo's family, to avoid putting himself in their power; and had cautioned Captain Clerke, and the officers, not to venture themselves far from the ships. In the course of the afternoon, the Chief asked Captain Cook, three feveral times, if he would not go to the bathing-place; and when he found, atlast, that the Captain could not be prevailed: upon, he went off, with all his people. He was apprehensive, without doubt, that the design was discovered; though no suspicion of it was then entertained by our Commander, who imagined that the natives were feized with fome fudden fright, from which, as usual, they would quickly recover. On one occasion, Captain Clerke and Mr. Gore were in particular danger. A party of the inhabitants, armed with clubs, advanced against them; and their safety was principally owing to Captain Clerke's walking with a pistol in his hand, which he once fired. The discovery of the conspiracy, especially so far as respected Captain Clerke and Mr. Gore, was made by a girl, whom one of the officers had brought from Huaheine. On this account, those who were charged with the execution of the defign were so greatly offended with her, that they threatened to take away her life, as foon as our navigators should leave the island: but proper methods were purfued for her fecurity. It was a happy circumstance that the affair was brought to light; since

N 2

U

q

re

d

al

tl

e:

C

fu

u

al

b

al

0

0

b

U

a

T

a

y

p

ft

h

V

p

V

t

d

t

CHAP. Such a scheme could not have been carried into VII. effect, without being, in its consequences, productive of much distress and calamity to the natives.

Whilst Captain Cook was at Ulietea, he was visited by his old friend Oree, who, in the former voyages, was Chief, or rather Regent, of Huaheine. Notwithstanding his now being, in some degree, reduced to the rank of a private person, he still preserved his consequence; never appeared without a numerous body of attendants; and was always provided with such presents as indicated his wealth, and were highly acceptable.

The last of the Society Islands to which our Commander failed, was Bolabola, where he arrived on the eighth of December. His chief view in passing over to this island was to procure from its monarch, Opoony, an anchor which Monsieur de Bougainville had lost at Otaheite, and which had been conveyed to Bolabola It was not from a want of anchors that Captain Cook was desirous of making the purchase, but to convert the iron of which it consisted into a fresh affortment of trading articles, these being now very much exhausted. The Captain succeeded in his negociation, and amply rewarded

Whilst our Commander was at Bolabola, he received an account of those military expeditions of the people of this country, which he had heard much of in each of his three voyages, and

Opoony for giving up the anchor.

8 Dec.

which had ended in the complete conquest of CHAP. Ulietea and Otaha. The Bolabola men, in confequence of these enterprises, were in the highest reputation for their valour; and, indeed, were deemed so invincible as to be objects of terror to all the neighbouring islands. It was an addition to their fame that their country was of such small extent, being not more than eight leagues in compass, and not half so large as Ulietea.

to

0-

he

as

he

t,

ın

ite

er

S;

as

ot-

11

ne

ef

re

h

, lt

n ıt

0

d

e

Captain Cook continued to the last his zeal for furnishing the natives of the South Sea with useful animals. At Bolabola, where there was already a ram, which had originally been left by the Spaniards at Otaheite, he carried ashore an ewe, that had been brought from the Cape of Good Hope; and he rejoiced in the prospect of laying a foundation, by this present, for a breed of sheep in the island. He left also at Ulietea, under the care of Oreo, an English boar and fow, and two goats. It may, therefore, be regarded as certain, that not only Otaheite, but all the neighbouring islands, will, in a few years, have their race of hogs confiderably improved; and it is probable, that they will be stocked with all the valuable animals, which have been transported thither by their European visiters. When this shall be accomplished, no part of the world will equal these islands, in the variety and abundance of the refreshments which they will be able to afford to navigators; nor did the Captain know any place that excelled them, even in their present state.

N 3

ir

of

ha

th

th

01

m

th

if

ar

ex

CE

in

m

b

m

re

N

a

fo

J

e

1

VII.

It is an observation of great importance, that the future felicity of the inhabitants of Otaheite. and the Society Islands, will not a little depend on their continuing to be visited from Europe, Our Commander could not avoid expressing it as his real opinion, that it would have been far better for these poor people, never to have known our superiority in the accommodations and arts which render life comfortable, than, after once knowing it, to be again left and abandoned to their original incapacity of improvement If the intercourse between them and us should wholly be discontinued, they cannot be restored to that happy mediocrity in which they lived before they were first discovered. It seemed to Captain Cook that it was become, in a manner, incumbent upon the Europeans to visit thek islands once in three or four years, in order to fupply the natives with those conveniences which we have introduced among them, and for which we have given them a predilection. Perhaps they may heavily feel the want of fuch occasional supplies, when it may be too late to go back to their old and less perfect contrivances; contrivances which they now despise, and which they have discontinued fince the introduction of ours. It is, indeed, to be apprehended, that by the time that the iron tools, of which they had become possessed, are worn out, they will have almost lost the knowledge of their own. In this last voyage of our Commander, a stone hatchet was as rare a thing among the inhabitants as an

that

eite,

end

ope.

g it

far

ave

an,

an-

ent.

red

Ved

to

er,

efe

to

ich

ey

al

to

n-

ey

rs.

ne

ld

e

CHAP. VII.

iron one was eight years before; and a chiffel of bone or stone was not to be seen. Spike-nails had fucceeded in their place; and of spike-nails the natives were weak enough to imagine that they had gotten an inexhaustible store. Of all our commodities, axes and hatchets remained the most unrivalled; and they must ever be held in the highest estimation through the whole of the islands. Iron tools are so strikingly useful, and are now become so necessary to the comfortable existence of the inhabitants, that, should they cease to receive supplies of them, their situation, in consequence of their neither possessing the materials, nor being trained up to the art of fabricating them, would be rendered completely miserable. It is impossible to reflect upon this representation of things without strong feelings of sympathy and concern. Sincerely is it to be wished, that such may be the order of events, and fuch the intercourse carried on with the fouthern islanders, that, instead of finally suffering by their acquaintance with us, they may rife to a higher state of civilization, and permanently enjoy bleffings far superior to what they had heretofore known.

Amidst the various subordinate employments which engaged the attention of Captain Cook and his associates, the great objects of their duty were never forgotten. No opportunity was lost of making astronomical and nautical observations; the consequence of which was, that the latitude

N 4

90

33

it

al

fe

p

d

p

t

t

t

ł

ł

VII. chored, the variations of the compass, the dips of the needle, and the state of the tides, were ascertained with an accuracy that forms a valuable addition to philosophical science, and will be of

eminent fervice to future navigators.

Our Commander was now going to take his final departure from Otaheite and the Society Islands. Frequently as they had been visited, it might have been imagined that their religious, political, and domestic regulations, manners, and customs, must, by this time, be thoroughly understood. A great accession of knowledge was undoubtedly gained in the prefent voyage; and yet it was confessed, both by Captain Cook and Mr. Anderson, that their accounts of things were still imperfect in various respects; and that they continued strangers to many of the most important institutions which prevail among the natives. There was one part of the character of feveral of these people, on which the well-regulated mind of the Captain would not permit him to enlarge. "Too much," fays he, "feems to have been " already known, and published in our former rela-" tions, about some of the modes of life, that made " Otaheite fo agreeable an abode to many on " board our ships; and if I could now add any " finishing strokes to a picture, the outlines of " which have been already drawn with fufficient " accuracy, I should still have hesitated to make

" this journal the place for exhibiting a view of

" licentious manners, which could only ferve to CHAP.

" disgust those for whose information I write *." VII.

1777.

From Mr. Anderson's account of the Otaheitans, it appears, that their religious system is extensive, and, in various instances, fingular. They do not feem to pay respect to one God as possessing pre-eminence, but believe in a plurality of divinities, all of whom are supposed to be very powerful. In different parts of the island, and in the neighbouring islands, the inhabitants chuse those deities for the objects of their worship, who, they think, are most likely to protect them, and to supply all their wants. If, however, they are disappointed in their expectations, they esteem it no impiety to change their divinity, by having recourse to another, whom they hope to find more propitious and fuccessful. In general, their notions concerning Deity are extravagantly abfurd. With regard to the foul, they believe it, according to Mr. Anderson, to be both immaterial and immortal; but he acknowledges, that they are far from entertaining those fublime expectations of future happiness which the Christian revelation affords, and which even reason alone, duly exercised, might teach us to expect +.

Although feventeen months had elapfed fince Captain Cook's departure from England, during

an.

os of

were

able

e of

his

iety

ed,

ous,

ers,

hly

was

and

and

ere

ney

ort.

res.

ral

ed

en-

en

la-

de

n

ıy

of

nt

of

^{*} Cook's Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, vol., ii. p. 1-140.

[†] Ibid. p. 162-165.

 Θ

which time he had not, upon the whole, been CHAP. unprofitably employed, was fenfible that, with VII. respect to the principal object of his instructions. ¥777it was now only the commencement of his voyage; and that, therefore, his attention was to be called anew, to every circumstance which might contribute towards the fafety of his people, and the ultimate fuccess of the expedition. Accordingly, he had examined into the state of the provisions, whilst he was at the Society Islands; and, as foon as he had left them, and had gotten beyond the extent of his former discoveries, he ordered a survey to be taken of all the boatswain's and carpenter's stores which were in the fhips, that he might be fully informed of their quantity and condition; and, by that means, know how to use them to the greatest advantage.

8 Dec. It was on the eighth of December, the very day on which he had touched there, that our Commander failed from Bolabola. In the night between the twenty-fecond and twenty-third, he 23. crossed the line, in the longitude of 203° 15' east; and on the twenty-fourth, land was discovered, which was found to be one of those low uninhabited islands that are so frequent in this ocean. Here our voyagers were fuccessful in catching a large quantity of turtle, which supplied them with an agreeable refreshment; and here, on the twenty - eighth, an eclipfe of the fun was observed by Mr. Bayly, Mr. King, and Captain Cook. On account of the feafon of the year,

1

the Captain called the land where he now was, C H A P. and which he judged to be about fifteen or VII. twenty leagues in circumference, CHRISTMAS 1777.

ISLAND *. By his order, feveral cocoa - nuts and yams were planted, and fome melon-feeds fown, in proper places; and a bottle was left, containing this infcription:

Georgius Tertius, Rex, 31 Decembris, 1777.

Naves

Resolution, Jac. Cook, Pr.

Discovery, Car. Clerke, Pr. +

een

vith

ons,

his

tion

nce

of

cpe-

the

the m, ner

of

ich

inby

teft

lay

m-

be-

he

15

:0-

W

115

in

ed e,

as

in

r,

On the second of January, 1778, the ships refumed their course to the northward, and though feveral evidences occurred of the vicinity of land, none was discovered till the eighteenth, when an island made its appearance, bearing northeast by east. Soon after, more land was feen, lying towards the north; and entirely detached from the former. The fucceeding day was diftinguished by the discovery of a third island, in the direction of west-north-west, and as far distant as the eye could reach. In steering towards the fecond island, our voyagers had some doubt whether the land before them was inhabited; but this matter was speedily cleared up, by the putting off of some canoes from the shore, containing from three to fix men each. Upon their

1778. 2 January.

184

^{*} The west side of it, on which the eclipse was observed, lies in the latitude of 1° 59' north, and in the longitude of 202° 30' east.

[†] Cook's voyage, ubi supra, p. 179-189.

W as

hi

the

ov be

ob

the

ifla

be

wa

to

wl

ed

dir

fro

tal

tha

ga

thi

ou

fro

W

ho

W

of

fh

W

07

W

la

CHAP. approach, the English were agreeably surprised VII. 1778.

20 January

to find, that they fpoke the language of Otaheite, and of the other countries which had lately been visited. These people were at first fearful of going on board; but when, on the twentieth, fome of them took courage, and ventured to do it, they expressed an astonishment, on entering the ship, which Captain Cook had never experienced in the natives of any place, during the whole course of his several voyages. Their eyes continually flew from object to object; and, by the wildness of their looks and gestures, they fully manifested their entire ignorance with relation to every thing they faw, and strongly marked to our navigators, that, till this time, they had never been visited by Europeans, or been acquainted with any of our commodities, excepting iron. Even with respect to iron, it was evident that they had only heard of it, or, at most, had known it in some small quantity, brought to them at a distant period; for all they understood concerning it was, that it was a fubstance much better adapted to the purposes of cutting, or the boring of holes, than any thing their own country produced. Their ceremonies on entering the ship, their gestures and motions, and their manner of finging, were fimilar to those which our voyagers had been accustomed to see in the places lately visited. There was, likewise, a farther circumstance in which these people perfectly refembled the other islanders; and that was, in their endeavouring to steal whatever came

rifed

eite,

een

of

eth,

do

ring

cpe-

the

yes

by hey

ela-

ced

nad

ac-

ing

ent

12d

to

od

ch

he

VII

ng

eir

ch

he

a

er-

s,

ne

within their reach; or rather to take it openly, CHAP. as what would either not be resented, or not hindered. The English soon convinced them of their mistake, by keeping such a watchful eye over them, that they afterwards were obliged to be less active in appropriating to themselves every object that struck upon their fancy, and excited the defire of possession.

One order given by Captain Cook at this fland was; that none of the boats crews should be permitted to go on shore; the reason of which was, that he might do every thing in his power to prevent the importation of a fatal disease, which, unhappily, had already been communicated in other places. With the same view, he directed that all female visiters should be excluded from the ships. Another necessary precaution, taken by the Captain, was a strict injunction, that no person, known to be capable of propagating disorder, should be sent upon duty out of the vessels. Thus zealous was the humanity of our Commander, to prevent an irreparable injury from being done to the natives. There are men who glory in their shame, and who do not care how much evil they communicate. Of this there was an instance at Tongataboo, in the gunner of the Difcovery, who had been stationed on shore to manage the trade for that ship; and who, though he was well acquainted with his own fituation, continued to have connexions with different women. His companions expostulated with him without effect, till Captain

ac

de

re

W

th

d

of

fi

ro

0

ft

d

CC

b

W

al

n

T

a

0

f

e

CHAP. Clerke, hearing of the dangerous irregularity of VII. his conduct, ordered him on board. If I knew the rascal's name, I would hang it up, as far sa lies in my power, to everlasting infamy.

Mr. Williamson being sent with the boats to search for water, and attempting to land, the inhabitants came down in such numbers, and were so violent in their endeavours to seize upon the oars, musquets, and, in short, every thing they could lay hold of, that he was obliged to fire, by which one man was killed. This unhappy circumstance was not known to Captain Cook till after he had left the island; so that all his measures were directed as if nothing of the

kind had happened.

When the ships were brought to an anchor, our Commander went on shore; and, at the very instant of his doing it, the collected body of the natives all fell flat upon their faces, and continued in that humble posture, till, by expressive signs, he prevailed upon them to rife. Other ceremonies followed; and the next day a trade was set on foot for hogs and potatoes, which the people of the island gave in exchange for nails and pieces of iron, formed into something like chissels. So far was any obstruction from being met with in watering, that, on the contrary, the inhabitants assisted our men in rolling the casks to and from the pool; and readily performed whatever was required.

Affairs thus going on to the Captain's fatisfaction, he made an excursion into the country,

of

ew

far

to

the

and

oon

ing

to

un-

ain

all

the

or,

the

dy

and !

ive

her

ade

ich

for

ing

om

ry,

ng

ily

tis-

у,

accompanied by Mr. Anderson and Mr. Webber, CHAP. the former of whom was as well qualified to describe with the pen, as the latter was to represent with his pencil, whatever might occur worthy of observation. In this excursion, the gentlemen, among other objects that called for their attention, found a Morai, a particular description of which, together with drawings of it, are given in the Voyage. On the return of our Commander, he had the pleasure of finding that a brick trade for pigs, fowls, and roots was carrying on with the greatest good order, and without any attempt to cheat, or steal, on the part of the natives. The rapacious disposition they at first displayed, was entirely corrected by their conviction that it could not be exercifed with impunity. Among the articles which they brought to barter, the most remarkable was a particular fort of cloak and cap, that might be reckoned elegant, even in countries where dress is eminently the object of attention. The cloak was richly adorned with red and yellow feathers, which in themselves were highly beautiful, and the newness and freshness of which added not a little to their beauty.

On the twenty-fecond, a circumstance occurred, which gave the English room to suspect that the people of the island are eaters of human flesh. Not, however, to rest the belief of the existence of fo horrid a practice on the foundation of suspicion only, Captain Cook was anxious to enquire into the truth of the fact, the result of

22 Jan.

CHAP. which was its being fully confirmed. An old IVI. man, in particular, who was asked upon the 1778. subject, answered in the affirmative, and seemed to laugh at the simplicity of such a question. His answer was equally affirmative on a repetition of the enquiry; and he added that the sless of men was excellent food, or, as he expressed it, a favoury eating. It is understood that enemies shain in battle are the sole objects of this abominable custom.

it was another island, named Oneeheow, where our Commander came to an anchor on the twenty-ninth of the month. The inhabitants

The island at which our voyagers had now

were found to resemble those of Atooi in their dispositions, manners, and customs; and proofs, too convincing, appeared that the horrid banquet of human sless is here as much relished, amidst

plenty, as it is in New Zealand. From a defire of benefiting these people, by furnishing them

with additional articles of food, the Captain left with them a ram-goat and two ewes, a boar

and fow-pig of the English breed, and the seeds of melons, pumpkins, and onions. These bene-

volent presents would have been made to Atooi,

the larger island, had not our navigators been unexpectedly driven from it by stress of weather.

Though the foil of Oneeheow feemed, in general, poor, it was observable, that the ground

was covered with shrubs and plants, some of which perfumed the air with a more delicious

fragrancy

fra

w

vi

th

lat

gr

be

fir

be

ot

of

as

fo

pe

W

tir

by

lie

gr

SA

fri

lar

fce

in

ab

fitt

be

Vai

29 January.

193

fragrancy than what Captain Cook had met CHAP. with at any other of the countries that had been visited by him in this part of the world.

1778

It is a curious circumstance, with regard to the islands in the Pacific Ocean which the late European voyages have added to the geography of the globe, that they have generally been found to lie in groups, or clusters. The fingle intermediate islands, which have as yet been discovered, are few in proportion to the others; though there are probably many more of them that are still unknown; and may serve as steps, by which the several clusters are, in some degree, connected together. Of the Archipelago now first visited, there were five only with which our Commander became at this time acquainted. The names of these, as given by the natives, were Woahoo, Atooi, Oneeheow, Oreehoua, and Tahoora. To the whole group Captain Cook gave the appellation of SANDWICH ISLANDS, in honour of his great friend and patron, the Earl of Sandwich *.

Concerning the island of Atooi, which is the largest of the five, and which was the principal scene of the Captain's operations, he collected. in conjunction with Mr. Anderson, a considerable, degree of information. The land, as to its

VOL. II.

old

the

ned

on.

ion

of

it,

ies

bo-

wo

ear

ere

the

nts

eir

fs,

ret dst-

ire

m eft

ar ds

e-

)1,

en T.

e-

d

of

15

^{*} The islands that were seen by Captain Cook, are fituated in the latitude of 21° 30' and 22° 15' north, and between the longitude of 199° 20' and 201° 36' ealt. It was in consequence of seventy-two sets of lunar observations that the longitude was determined.

CHAP. VII. 1778. general appearance, does not in the least resemble any of the islands that our voyagers had hitherto visited within the tropic, on the fouth side of the equator; excepting fo far as regards its hills near the centre, which flope gently towards the Hogs, dogs, and fowls, were the only tame or domestic animals that were here found: and these were of the same kind with those which exist in the countries of the South Pacific Ocean. Among the inhabitants (who are of a middle stature, and firmly made), there is a more remarkable equality in the fize, colour, and figure of both fexes, than our Commander had observed in most other places. They appeared to be bleft with a frank and chearful difpofition; and, in Captain Cook's opinion, they are equally free from the fickle levity which distinguishes the natives of Otaheite, and the fedate cast discernible amongst many of those of Tongataboo. It is a very pleasing circumstance in their character, that they pay a particular attention to their women, and readily lend affistance to their wives, in the tender offices of maternal duty. On all occasions, they seemed to be deeply impressed with a consciousness of their own inferiority; being alike strangers to the preposterous pride of the more polished Japonese, and of the ruder Greenlander. Contrary to the general practice of the countries that had hitherto been discovered in the Pacific Ocean, the people of the Sandwich Islands have not their ears perforated; nor have they the least idea of

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK.

le

to

of

lls

he

ly

d;

fic

3

a II.

er

ır.

0.

ev

ch

he

of

ce

ar

nd

es

d

of

to

0-

ry

d

ir of

C H A P. VII. 1778.

wearing ornaments in them, though, in other respects, they are sufficiently fond of adorning their persons. In every thing manufactured by them there is an uncommon degree of neatness and ingenuity; and the elegant form and polish of some of their fishing-hooks could not be exceeded by any European artist, even if he should add all his knowledge in design to the number and convenience of his tools. From what was feen of their agriculture, fufficient proofs were afforded that they are not novices in that art; and that the quantity and goodness of their vegetable productions may as much be attributed to skilful culture, as to natural fertility of foil. Amidst all the resemblances between the natives of Atooi, and those of Otaheite, the coincidence of their languages was the most striking; being, almost word for word, the fame. Had the Sandwich Islands been discovered by the Spaniards, at an early period, they would undoubtedly have taken advantage of fo excellent a fituation, and have made use of them as refreshing places to their ships, which fail annually from Acapulco for Manilla. Happy, too, would it have been for Lord Anson, if he had known that there existed a group of islands, half way between America and Tinian, where all his wants could effectually have been supplied, and the different hardships to which he was exposed have been avoided *.

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 179-252.

C H A P. VII. 1778. 2 Feb. 7 March.

29.

On the fecond of February, our navigators purfued their course to the northward, in doing which the incidents they met with were almost entirely of a nautical kind. The long-looked for coast of New Albion was seen on the seventh of March, the ships being then in the latitude of 44° 33' north, and in the longitude of 235' 20' east. As the vessels ranged along the west fide of America, Captain Cook gave names to feveral capes and head-lands which appeared in fight. At length, on the twenty-ninth, the Captain came to an anchor at an inlet where the appearance of the country differed much from what had been feen before; being full of mountains, the fummits of which were covered with fnow; while the valleys between them, and the grounds on the fea-coast, high as well as low, were covered, to a confiderable breadth, with high, strait trees, which formed a beautiful prospect, as of one vast forest*. It was immediately found that the coast was inhabited; and there soon came off to the Resolution three canoes, containing eighteen of the natives; who could not, however, be prevailed upon to venture themselves on board. Notwithstanding this, they displayed a peaceable disposition; shewed great readiness to part with any thing they had, in exchange for what was offered them; and expressed a stronger desire for iron than for any other of our commercial articles, appearing to be perfectly acquainted with

b

n

t

d

i

i

r

r

0

t

t

0

ti

1

f

h

t

t

* When this land was feen, the ships were in the latitude of 49° 29' north, and the longitude of 232° 29' east.

1778.

the use of that metal. From these favourable cir- CHAP. cumstances, our voyagers had reason to hope that they should find this a comfortable station to supply all their wants, and to make them forget the hardships and delays which they had experienced during a constant succession of adverse winds, and boilerous weather, almost ever fince their arrival upon the coast of America*.

ır-

ng

fle

or

of

of

5°

est

to

in

p-

p. at

S, V;

ds

re

n,

nd

ne

g

r, d.

le th

as

10

1-

th

ti-

ft.

The ships having happily found an excellent inlet, the coasts of which appeared to be inhabited by a race of people who were difposed to maintain a friendly intercourse with strangers, Captain Cook's first object was to fearch for a commodious harbour; and he had little trouble in discovering what he wanted. A trade having immediately commenced, the articles which the inhabitants offered to fale were the skins of various animals, fuch as bears, wolves, foxes, deer, rackoons, polecats, martins; and, in particular, of the fea-otters. To these were added, besides the skins in their native shape, garments made of them; another fort of clothing, formed from the bark of a tree; and various different pieces of workmanship. But of all the articles brought to market, the most extraordinary were human skulls, and hands not yet quite stripped of their flesh; some of which had evident marks of their having been upon the fire. The things which the natives took in exchange for their commodities, were knives, chiffels, pieces of iron and

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 253. 258. 264 - 267.

1

1

2

F

2

I

1778.

CHAP. tin, nails, looking-glasses, buttons, or any kind. of metal. Glass beads did not strike their imaginations; and cloth of every fort they rejected. Though commerce, in general, was carried on with mutual honesty, there were some among these people who were as much inclined to thievery as the islanders in the Southern Ocean. They were, at the same time, far more dangerous thieves; for, possessing sharp iron instruments, they could cut a hook from a tackle, or any other piece of iron from a rope, the moment that the backs of the English were turned. The dexterity with which they conducted their operations of this nature, frequently eluded the most cautious vigilance. Some flighter instances of deception, in the way of traffic, Captain Cook thought it better to bear with than to make them the foundation of a quarrel; and to this he was the rather determined, as the English articles were now reduced to objects of a trifling nature. In the progress of the commerce, the natives would deal for nothing but metal; and, at length, brass was so eagerly fought for, in preference to iron, that, before our navigators quitted the place, scarcely a bit of it was left in the ships, excepting what belonged to the necessary instruments. Whole fuits of clothes were stripped of every button; bureaus were deprived of their furniture; copper kettles, tin cannisters, candlesticks, and whatever of the like kind could be found, all went to wreck; fo that these Americans became possessions of a greater medley and variety of things

from our people, than any other nation that had CHAP. been visited in the course of the voyage. VII.

1778.

Of all the uncivilized tribes which our Commander had met with in his feveral navigations, he never found any who had fuch strict notions of their having a right to the exclusive property of every thing which their country produces, as the inhabitants of the Sound where he was now stationed. At first, they wanted to be paid for the wood and water that were carried on board; and had the Captain been upon the spot, when the demands were made, he would certainly have complied with them: but the workmen, in his absence, maintained a different opinion, and refused to fubmit to any fuch claims. When fome grass, which appeared to be of no use to the natives, was wanted to be cut, as food for the few goats and sheep which still remained on board, they infifted that it should be purchased, and were very unreasonable in their terms; notwithstanding which, Captain Cook confented to gratify them, as far as he was able. It was always a facred rule with him never to take any of the property of the people whom he visited, without making them an ample compensation.

n

IS

it

C

15

25

ď

S

t-

t-

d

11

e

The grand operation of our navigators, in their present station, was to put the ships into a compleat repair for the prosecution of the expedition. While this business was carrying on, our Commander took the opportunity of examining every part of the Sound; in the course of which he gained a farther knowledge of the inhabitants,

200

VII. ity. In one instance he met with a surly Chief, who could not be softened with presents, though he condescended to accept of them. The semales of the place over which he presided, shewed a

more agreeable disposition; for some of the young women expeditiously dressed themselves in their best apparel, and, assembling in a body, welcomed the English to their village, by joining

r

h

b

V

h

0

it

h

g

A

b

ai

as

ar

re

fo

m

as

tc

o

m

th

CO

an

welcomed the English to their village, by joining

in a fong, which was far from being harsh or disagreeable. On another occasion, the Captain

was entertained with finging. Being visited by a number of strangers, on the twenty-second of

April, as they advanced towards the ships, they all stood up in their canoes, and began to sing.

Some of their fongs, in which the whole body joined, were in a flow, and others in a quicker

time; and their notes were accompanied with the most regular motions of their hands; or with

beating in concert, with their paddles, on the

fides of the canoes; to which were added other very expressive gestures. At the end of each song,

they continued filent for a few moments, and then

began again, fometimes pronouncing the word

Hooee! forcibly as a chorus,

Among the natives of the country, there was one Chief who attached himself to our Commander in a particular manner. Captain Cook having, at parting, bestowed upon him a small present, received, in return, a beaver-skin, of much greater value. This called upon the Captain to make some addition to his present, with which the

92 April.

VII.

1778.

Chief was fo much pleased, that he insisted on our CHAP. Commander's acceptance of the beaver-skin cloak which he then wore; and of which he was particularly fond. Admiring this instance of generosity, and desirous that he should not suffer by his friendship, the Captain gave him a new broad-sword, with a brass hilt; the possession of

which rendered him completely happy *.

ilf,

es.

10

es ,

g

or in

of

y

g.

y

er

9 h

le

15

5,

n d

IS

1-

h

0

e

On Captain Cook's first arrival in this inlet, he had honoured it with the name of KING GEORGE'S SOUND; but he afterwards found that it is called NOOTKA by the natives †. During his stay in the place, he displayed his usual sagacity and diligence, in conjunction with Mr. Anderson, in collecting every thing that could be learned concerning the neighbouring country and its inhabitants; and the account is interesting as it exhibits a picture of productions, people, and manners very different from what had occurred in the Southern Ocean. I can only, as on former occasions, flightly advert to a few of the more leading circumstances. The climate, so far as our navigators had experience of it, was found to be in an eminent degree milder than that on the east coast of America, in the same parallel of latitude; and it was remarkable that the thermometer, even in the night, never fell lower than 42°; while in the day it frequently rose to

* Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 269-286.

[†] The entrance of the Sound is situated in the east corner of Hope Bay, in the latitude of 49° 33' north, and in the longitude of 233° 12' eaft.

m

th

bi

no

211

cu

ag

tri

cv

rea

tiv

go

uſi

wl

pe

pa

to

wl

the

chi

an

an

OC

ga

be

alv

uti

tio

the

the

of

art

VII. 1778.

60°. With regard to trees, those of which the woods are chiefly composed, are the Canadian pine, the white cypress, and the wild pine. with two or three different forts of pine that are less common. In the other vegetable productions there appeared but little variety: but it is to be confidered that, at so early a season, feveral might not yet have fprung up; and that many more might be concealed from our voyagers, in consequence of the narrow sphere of their refearches. Of the land-animals, the most common were bears, deer, foxes, and wolves. The fea-animals which were feen off the coast, were whales, porpoifes, and feals. Birds, in general, are not only rare as to the different species, but very scarce as to numbers; and the few which are to be met with are so shy, that, in all probability, they are continually harraffed by the natives; either to eat them as food, or to getpossession of their feathers, which are used as ornaments. Fish are more plentiful in quantity than birds, but were not found in any great variety; and, yet, from several circumstances; there was reason to believe, that the variety is confiderably increased at certain seasons. only animals that were observed of the reptile kind were fnakes and water-lizards; but the infect tribe feemed to be more numerous.

With respect to the inhabitants of the country, their persons are generally under the common stature; but not stender in proportion, being usually pretty full or plump, though without being muscular. From their bringing to sale hu-

he

an

e,

at

0.

ut

n,

nat

a.

eir

ni-

he

ere

al,

ut

ch

.0.

he

ret

as

ity

eat

25;

15

he

ile

:ct

y,

on

ng

ut

ıu-

man skulls and bones, it may justly be inferred CHAP. that they treat their enemies with a degree of brutal cruelty; notwithstanding which, it does not follow that they are to be reproached with any charge of peculiar inhumanity: for the circumstance now mentioned only marks a general agreement of character with that of almost every tribe of uncivilized men, in every age, and in every part of the globe. Our navigators had no reason to complain of the disposition of the natives, who appeared to be a docile, courteous, good-natured people; rather phlegmatic in the usual cast of their tempers, but quick in resenting what they apprehend to be an injury, and eafily permitting their anger to fubfide. Their other passions, and especially their curiosity, seemed to lie in some measure dormant; one cause of which may be found in the indolence that, for the most part, is prevalent amongst them. chief employments of the men are those of fishing; and of killing land or fea-animals, for the fustenance of their families; while the women are occupied in manufacturing their flaxen or woollen garments, or in other domestic offices. It must be mentioned to their honour, that they were always properly clothed, and behaved with the utmost decorum, justly deserving all commendation, for a bashfulness and modesty becoming their fex: and this was the more meritorious in them, as the male inhabitants discovered no sense of shame. In their manufactures and mechanic arts, these people have arrived to a greater degree

VII. 1778-

al

at

W

CC

fo

ha

fo

no

of

uf

of

be

cii

de

ha

til

to

lol

the

mi

He

ev

ex

his

ve ed

acc

29

33:

C H A P. VII.

of extent and ingenuity, both with regard to the defign and the execution, than could have been expected from their natural disposition, and the little progress to which they have arrived in general civilization. Their dexterity, in particular, with respect to works of wood, must principally be ascribed to the assistance they receive from iron tools, which are in univerfal use amongst them, and in the application of which they are very dexterous. Whence they have derived their knowledge of iron, was a matter of speculation with Captain Cook. The most probable opinion is, that this and other metals may have been introduced by way of Hudson's Bay and Canada, and thus fuccessively have been conveyed across the continent, from tribe to tribe. Nor is it unreafonable to suppose that these metals may some times be brought, in the same manner, from the north-western parts of Mexico*. The language of Nootka is by no means harsh or disagreeable; for it abounds, upon the whole, rather with what may be called labial and dental, than with guttural founds. A large vocabulary of it was collected by. Mr. Anderson.

Whilst Captain Cook was at Nootka Sound, great attention was paid by him, as usual, to

^{*} Two filver spoons, of a construction similar to what may sometimes be seen in Flemish pictures of still life, were procured here by Mr. Gore, who bought them from a native, who wore them, tied together with a leathern thong, as an ornament round his neck. Mr Gore gave the spoons to Sir Joseph Banks.

astronomical and nautical subjects. The observ- C H A P. ations which he had an opportunity of making were, indeed, fo numerous, as to form a very confiderable addition to geographical and philofophical science *.

he

en

he

le-

r,

ly

m

glt

re

ar on

on

en la,

os

22.

lehe

9.9 e;

at

itol-

1,

to

at e, m

rn

he

On the twenty-fixth, the repairs of the ships having been completed, every thing was ready for the Captain's departure. When, in the afternoon of that day, the vessels were upon the point of failing, the mercury in the barometer fell unusually low; and there was every other presage of an approaching storm, which might reasonably be expected to come from the fouthward. This circumstance induced our Commander in some degree to hesitate, and especially as night was at hand, whether he should venture to fail, or wait till the next morning. But his anxious impatience to proceed upon the voyage, and the fear of losing the present opportunity of getting out of the Sound, made a greater impression upon his mind than any apprehension of immediate danger. He determined, therefore, to put to sea at all events; and accordingly carried his defign into execution that evening. He was not deceived in his expectations of a storm. Scarcely were the veffels out of the Sound before the wind increafed to a strong gale, with squalls and rain, accompanied by fo dark a sky, that the length

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 288. 291. 293, 294. 296. 298. 300, 301.309, 310. 318, 319. 325. 329, 330. 332. 334. 337 — 340.

5

0

ta

c

if

1;

th

af

th

of

ea

of

ſh

W

th

bo

of

17 his

of

his

ab

KA

on the

he lea

fto

gra

VII. wind took a direction that blew our navigators 1778. from the coast; and though, on the twenty and the Resolution sprang a leak, no material damage ensued.

In the profecution of the voyage to the north, and back again to the Sandwich Islands, the facts that occurred were chiefly of a nautical kind Minutely to record these, is not the purpose of the present work, and indeed, would extend it to an unreasonable length. Recourse must be had to the Voyage at large, for a detail of every circumstance in which Captain Cook, as a navigator, was concerned. In that Voyage will be found a full and exact account of the coasts which he passed, the capes and promontories to which he gave names, the bays which he entered, the islands he discovered, the traverses he made, the latitudes and longitudes that were fettled by him, and the variations that happened in the wind and the weather. From this long and important na vigation, I can only felect fome few incidents, that may be accommodated to the taste and expectations of the generality of readers.

One thing it is not improper here to observe; which is, that the Captain, in his passage along the coast of America, kept at a distance from that coast, whenever the wind blew strongly upon it, and sailed on till he could approach it again with safety. Hence several great gaps were left unexplored, and particularly between the latitudes of

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK. 207

of the supposed Straights of Anian was not ascertained. Every one who is acquainted with the character of our Commander will be sensible, that if he had lived to return again to the north in 1779, he would have endeavoured to explore the parts which had been left unexamined.

he

ors

y.

e,

th,

cts nd.

of

it

rad cir.

ga.

be

ich ich

the

m,

and

na-

its,

ex-

ve;

ong

that

1 it,

vith

nex-

es of

The first place at which Captain Cook landed, after his departure from Nootka Sound, was at an island, of eleven or twelve leagues in length; the fouth-west point of which lies in the latitude of 59° 49' north, and the longitude of 216° 58' east. Here, on the eleventh of May, at the foot of a tree, on a little eminence not far from the shore, he left a bottle, with a paper in it, on which were inscribed the names of the ships, and the date of the discovery. Together with the bottle, he enclosed two filver two-penny pieces of his Majesty's coin, which had been struck in 1772. These, with many others, had been given him by the Reverend Dr. Kaye, the prefent Dean of Lincoln; and our Commander, as a mark of his esteem and regard for that learned and respectable gentleman, named the island, after him, KAYE'S ISLAND.

At an inlet, where the ships came to an anchor, on the twelfth, and to which Captain Cook gave the appellation of PRINCE WILLIAM'S SOUND, he had an opportunity not only of stopping the leak which the Resolution had sprung in the late storm, and of prosecuting his nautical and geographical discoveries, but of making considerable

C H A P. VII. 1778.

II May.

12.

·ł

t

1

t

F

n

v B

T

if

pa of

tra

Fr

Ca

ac

git

exi

gat

we

tha

wit

Hu

bec

exa

354

VII.

additions to his knowledge of the inhabitants of the American coalt. From every observation which was made concerning the persons of the natives of this part of the coast; it appeared that they had a striking resemblance to those of the Esquimaux and Greenlanders. Their canoes, their weapons, and their instruments for fishing and hunting, are likewife exactly the fame, in point of materials and construction, that are used in Greenland. The animals in the neighbourhood of Prince William's Sound are, in general, fimilar to those which are found at Nootka. of the most beautiful skins here offered to sale, was, however, that of a small animal, which seemed to be peculiar to the place. Mr. Anderson was inclined to think that it is the animal which is described by Mr. Pennant, under the name of the Casan Marmot. Among the birds feen in this country, were the white-headed eagle; the shag; and the Alcedo, or great king-fisher, the colours of which were very fine and bright. The humming-bird, also, came frequently and flew about the ship, while at anchor; but it can scarce ly be supposed that it can be able to subsist here during the severity of winter. Water-fowl, upon the whole, are in confiderable plenty; and there is a species of diver, about the fize of a partridge, which feems peculiar to the place. Tork and halibut were almost the only kinds of fish that were obtained by our voyagers. Vegetables, of any fort, were few in number; and the trees were chiefly the Canadian and spruce pine, some

of

on

he

at

he

s,

ng

in

ed

od

ni-

ne

le,

m-

on

ch

me

in

he

he

he

ew

ce.

fift

wl,

nd

ar-

rsk

fish les,

ees

me

f

CHAP.

VII.

1778.

of which were of a confiderable height and thickness. The beads and iron that were found among the people of the coast, must undoubtedly have been derived from some civilized nation: and yet there was ample reason to believe, that our English navigators were the first Europeans with whom the natives had ever held a direct communication. From what quarter, then, had they gotten our manufactures? Most probably, through the intervention of the more inland tribes, from Hudson's Bay, or the fettlements on the Canadian lakes. This, indeed, must certainly have been the case, if iron was known amongst the inhabitants of this part of the American coast, prior to the discovery of it by the Russians, and before there was any traffic with them carried on from Kamtschatka. From what was feen of Prince William's Sound, Captain Cook judged that it occupied at least, a degree and a half of latitude, and two of longitude, exclusively of the arms or branches, the extent of which is not known *.

Some days after leaving this Sound, our navigators came to an inlet, from which great things were expected. Hopes were strongly entertained, that it would be found to communicate either with the sea to the north, or with Baffin's or Hudson's Bay to the east; and accordingly, it became the object of very accurate and serious examination. The Captain was soon persuaded

Vol. II.

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 286. 341. 349, 350. 354. 362. 366. 371. 376, 377, 278. 380.

fi

h

V

re

tl

W

th

th

th

et

na

Sc

G

in

th

no

be

kr

ar

th

W

ca

th

th

un

of

no

that the expectations formed from it were ground. less; notwithstanding which, he persisted in the 1778.

fearch of a passage, more, indeed, to satisfy other people, than to confirm his own opinion,

J June.

In consequence of a complete investigation of the inlet, indubitable marks occurred of its being a river. This river, without feeing the least appearance of its fource, was traced by our voyagers, as high as the latitude of 61° 30', and the longitude of 210°, being seventy leagues from its entrance. During the course of the navigation, on the first of June, Lieutenant King was ordered on shore, to display the royal flag, and to take possession of the country in his Majesty's name. The Lieutenant, at the same time, buried in the ground a bottle, containing fome pieces of English coin, of the year 1772, and a paper, on which the names of the ships were inscribed, and the date of the present discovery. The great river now discovered, promises to vie with the most considerable ones already known; and, by itself and its branches, lies open to a very extenfive inland communication. If, therefore, the knowledge of it should be of future service, the time which was spent in exploring it ought the less to be regretted. But to Captain Cook, who had a much greater object in view, the delay that was hence occasioned was a real loss, because the feafon was advancing apace. It was, however, a satisfaction to him to reflect, that if he had not examined this very confiderable inlet, it would have been assumeed, by speculative fabri-

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK.

cators of geography, as a fact, that there was a CHAP. passage through it to the North Sea, or to Baffin's or Hudson's Bay. Perhaps, too, it would have been marked, on future maps of the world, with greater precision, and more certain figns of reality, than the invisible, because imaginary, Straights of de Fuca, and de Fonte. In describing the inlet, our Commander had left a blank which was not filled up with any particular name; and, therefore, the Earl of Sandwich directed, with the greatest propriety, that it should be called Cook's RIVER.

id.

he

fy

n.

he

a

p.

va-

he

its

n,

ed

ke

ne.

he

ıg.

on

nd

eat

he

by

en-

he

he

he

ho

ay

rfe

W.

he

11

ori-

All the natives who were met with, during the examination of this river, appeared, from every mark of refemblance, to be of the fame nation with the inhabitants of Prince William's Sound; but from the people of Nootka, or King George's Sound, they essentially differed, both in their persons and their language. The only things which were feen among them, that were not of their own manufacture, were a few glass beads, the iron points of their spears, and knives of the fame metal. Whencefoever thefe articles might be derived, it was evident that they had never had any immediate intercourse with the Russians; fince, if that had been the case, our voyagers would scarcely have found them clothed in fuch valuable skins as those of the sea-otter. A very beneficial fur-trade might undoubtedly be carried on with the inhabitants of this vast coast. But, without a practicable northern passage, the situation is too remote to

1778.

t

t

V

C

2

fi

I

P

W

fu

p

be

y

le

W

ot

dr

fo

in

na

an

afl fu

th

N

at

fh.

co

VII. hence ever derive any material advantage; though 1778. it is impossible to say, with certainty, how far the spirit of commerce, for which the English nation is so eminently distinguished, may extend *. The most valuable, or rather the only valuable skins, which Captain Cook saw on the west side of America, were those of the sea-otter; for as to the skins of all the other animals of the country, and especially of the soxes and martins, they seemed to be of an inferior quality †.

& June.

€9.

It was on the fixth of June that our navigators got clear of Cook's River. Proceeding in the course of their discoveries, when they were failing, on the nineteenth, amidst the group of islands which were called by Beering Schumagin's Islands, Captain Clerke fired three guns, and brought to, expressing, by the proper signals, that he wished to speak with Captain Cook. At this our Commander was not a little alarmed; and, as no apparent danger had been remarked in the passage through the channel where the vessels now were, it was apprehended that some accident, such as springing a leak, must have happened. On Captain Clerke's coming on

^{*} Several ships have been fitted out from our settlements in India, as well as in England, on the speculation of this fur-trade. However, little benefit hath hitherto accrued from it, excepting to the proprietors of the first vessel; the cargo which it carried having lowered the price of furs extremely in the China market.

[†] Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 384. 386. 396 - 401.

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK. 213

ıld

gh

far

ilh

X-

12-

eft

T;

he

ns,

DTS

he

il-

of

ns

nd

ls,

k.

mre-

re

at

ıft.

n

its

nis

ed

1; of

I.

board the Refolution, he related that several of CHAR the natives had followed his ship; that one of them had made many figns, taking off his cap, and bowing after the manner of Europeans; and that, at length, he had fastened to a rope, which was handed down to him, a fmall thin wooden case or box. Having delivered his parcel safe, and spoken something, accompanied with more figns, the canoes dropped aftern, and left the Discovery. On opening the box, a piece of paper was found, folded up carefully, upon which fomething was written, that was reasonably fupposed to be in the Russian language. To the paper was prefixed the date 1778, and in the body of the note there was a reference to the year 1776. Although no person on board was learned enough to decypher the alphabet of the writer, his numerals sufficiently marked that others had preceded our voyagers in visiting this dreary part of the globe; and the prospect of foon meeting with men who were united to them in ties somewhat closer than those of our common nature, and who were not strangers to the arts and commerce of civilized life, could not but afford a fensible fatisfaction to people who, for fuch a length of time, had been conversant with the favages of the Pacific Ocean, and of the North American continent. Captain Clerke was, at first, of opinion that some Russians had been shipwrecked; but no such idea occurred to Captain Cook. He rather thought that the paper contained a note of information, left by fome

VII. 1778.

P 3

ti

na

th

W

CC

th

in

ar

th

fo

th

P

be

ha

ar

as

h

ar

la

a A

ol

fh

u

le

0

10

CHAP. Russian traders, to be delivered to the next of VII. their countrymen who should arrive; and that 1778. the natives, seeing the English pass, and supposing them to be Russians, had resolved to bring off the note. Accordingly, our Commander pursued his voyage, without enquiring farther into the matter.

sı June.

On the twenty-first, amongst some hills, on the main land, that towered above the clouds to a most amazing height, one was discovered to have a volcano, which continually threw up wast columns of black smoke. It doth not stand far from the coast; and it lies in the latitude of 54° 48', and the longitude of 195° 45'. This mountain was rendered remarkable by its figure, which is a complete cone; and the volcano is at the very fummit. While, in the afternoon of the fame day, during a calm of three hours, the English were fishing with great success for halibuts, a fmall canoe, conducted by one man, came to them from an island in the neighbourhood. On approaching the ship, he took off his cap, and bowed, as the native had done, who had visited the Discovery a day or two before From the acquired politeness of these people, as well as from the note already mentioned, it was evident that the Russians must have a communication and traffic with them; and of this a fresh proof occurred in the present visiter; for he wore a pair of green cloth breeches, and a jacket of black cloth, or stuff, under the gut - shirt or frock of his own country,

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK. 215

•of

nat

of-

ng der

ner

on

ids.

red

up nd

of his

re,

at

of

he for

ın,

ur-

his

ho

re.

as

as

nith: re

of

or

In the profecution of the voyage, on the CHAP. twenty-fixth, there was fo thick a fog, that our navigators could not fee a hundred yards before them; notwithstanding which, as the weather was moderate, the Captain did not intermit his courfe. At length, however, being alarmed at the found of breakers on one fide of the ship, he immediately brought her to, and came to an anchor; and the Discovery, by his order, did the same. A few hours after, the fog having in fome degree cleared away, it appeared that both the veffels had escaped a very imminent danger. Providence, in the dark, had conducted them between rocks which our Commander would not have ventured to pass through in a clear day, and had conveyed them to an anchoring-place, as good as he could possibly have fixed upon, had the choice been entirely at his option.

On the twenty-feventh, our voyagers reached an island, that is known by the name of Oonalashka *; the inhabitants of which behaved with a degree of politeness uncommon to savage tribes. A young man, who had overfet his canoe, being obliged by this accident to come on board the ship, went down into Captain Cook's cabin, upon the first invitation, without expressing the least reluctance or uneasiness. His own clothes

VII. 1778. 26 June.

^{*} The harbour of Samganooda, on the north fide of Oonalashka, in which Captain Cook came to an anchor. is fituated in the latitude of 53° 55' north, and in the longitude of 193° 30' east.

1

1

1

t

p

G

e

t

ti

la

W p

A h

tl

CI

th

VII. 1778.

CHAP being wet, the Captain gave him others, in which he dreffed himfelf with as much eafe as any Englishman could have done. From the behaviour of this youth, and that of some of the rest of the natives, it was evident that these people were no strangers to Europeans, and to feveral of their customs. There was fomething, however, in the English ships that greatly excited their attention; for fuch as could not come off in canoes, affembled on the neighbouring hills to look at them. In one instance it was apparent that the inhabitants were fo far from having made any progress in politeness, that they were still immersed in the most favage manners. For as our Commander was walking along the shore, on the twenty-ninth, he met with a group of them, of both fexes, who were feated on the grafs, at a repast, consisting of raw fish, which they feemed to eat with as much relish as persons in civilized life would experience from a turbot, ferved up in the richest fauce. Soon after the vessels had come to an anchor at Qonalashka, a native of the island brought on board such another note as had been given to Captain Clerke. He presented it to Captain Cook; but, as it was written in the Russian language, and could be of no use to the English, though it might be of consequence to others, the Captain returned it to the bearer, and dismissed him with a few presents; for which he expressed his thanks by making feveral low bows as he retired *.

* Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 403. 413 - 424.

29 June.

in

as

he

he

efe

to

g,

ed

off

lls

nt ng

re

Oľ

re,

of

he

ch.

ris

t,

ne

1,

h

e.

15

e

e.

d

V y

On the fecond of July, our voyagers put to CHAP. fea from Oonalashka; and, pursuing their course of navigation and discovery, came, on the fixteenth, within fight of a promontory, near which our Commander ordered lieutenant Williamson to land, that he might see what direction the coast took beyond it, and what the country produced. Accordingly, Mr. Williamson went on shore, and reported, on his return, that having landed on the point, and climbed the highest hill, he found that the farthest part of the coast in fight bore nearly north. At the same time, he took possession of the country in his Majesty's name, and left a bottle, in which was enclosed a piece of paper, containing an inscription of the names of the ships, together with the date of the discovery. To the promontory he gave the name of Cape NEWENHAM *. The land, as far as Mr. Williamson could see, produces neither tree nor shrub; but the lower grounds. were not destitute of grass, and of some other plants, very few of which were in flower.

When our navigators, on the third of August, had advanced to the latitude of 62° 34', a great lofs was fultained by them in the death of Mr. Anderson, the surgeon of the Resolution, who had been lingering under a confumption for more than twelve months. He was a young man of a cultivated understanding and agreeable manners,

VII. 1778. 2 July

3 August.

^{*} It is a rocky point, of tolerable height, fituated in the latitude of 58° 42', and in the longitude of 197° 36'.

V

n

0

C

C

V

n

tl

a

te

0

A

I

fa fa

tl

h

C

n

if

W

VII.

and was well skilled in his own profession; besides which, he had acquired a confiderable degree of knowledge in other branches of science. How useful an affistant he was to Captain Cook, hath often appeared in the present narrative, and is fully displayed in the Voyage at large. Had his life been spared, the public would undoubtedly have received from him fuch communications, on various parts of the natural history of the feveral places that had been visited, as would justly have entitled him to very high commendation. The proofs of his abilities that now remain, will hand down the name of Anderson, in conjunction with that of Cook, to posterity *. Soon after he had breathed his last, land having been feen at a distance, which was supposed to be an island, our Commander honoured it with the appellation of ANDERSON'S ISLAND. The next day he removed Mr. Law, the furgeon of the Discovery, into the Resolution, and appointed Mr. Samwell, the furgeon's first mate of the Resolution, to be surgeon of the Discovery.

July. On the ninth, Captain Cook came to an anchor under a point of land, to which he gave

^{*} Mr. Anderson left his papers to Sir Joseph Banks: but the Admiralty took possession of the larger part of them, and there they are still retained. Such parts as related solely to natural history were delivered by Captain King to Sir Joseph; who wishes to add his testimony to the excellence of Mr Anderson's character, to the utility of his observations, and to the great probability that, if he had survived, he would have given to the world something which would have done him credit.

1778.

the name of CAPE PRINCE OF WALES, and CHAP. which is remarkable by being the most western extremity of America hitherto explored *. This extremity is distant from the eastern Cape of Siberia only thirteen leagues: and thus our Commander had the glory of afcertaining the vicinity of the two continents, which had only been conjectured from the reports of the neighbouring Afiatic inhabitants, and the imperfect observations of the Russian navigators †.

e

V

h S

15

y

e d

1-

1,

1-

n

n

n

C

e

d

C

n

e

d

S

d

g

Resuming his course on the tenth, Captain Cook anchored in a bay, the land of which was at first supposed to be a part of the island of Alaschka, which is laid down in Mr. Stæhlin's map. But, from the figure of the coast; from the fituation of the opposite shore of America; and from the longitude, the Captain foon began to think that it was more probably the country of the Tschutski, on the eastern extremity of Asia, which had been explored by Beering in 1728. In the refult it appeared that this was in fact the case. Our Commander became fully fatisfied, in the farther progress of his voyage, that Mr. Stæhlin's map must be erroneous; and he had the honour of restoring the American continent to that space which the geographer now mentioned had occupied with his imaginary island of Alaschka.

* Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 426. 433. 440, 441. 444. Cape Prince of Wales, is fituated in the latitude of 65° 46', and in the longitude of 191° 45'.

† Coxe's Comparative View of the Russian Discoveries, with those made by Captains Cook and Clerke, p. 15, 16. 10 July.

T

f

b

t

d

n

h

a

li

tl

to

ir

0

ir

al

0

fa

W

tł

P

ti

th

C

21

C H A P. VII. 1778. 11 July.

17.

18.

19.

From the Bay of St. Lawrence, belonging to the country of the Tschutski, our navigators steered, on the eleventh, to the east, in order to get nearer to the coast of America. After that, proceeding to the north, they reached, on the feventeenth, the latitude of 70° 331*. On this day, a brightness was perceived in the northern horizon, like that which is reflected from ice, and is commonly called the blink. This was at first but little noticed, from a supposition that there was no probability of meeting with ice fo foon: and yet, the sharpness of the air, and the gloominess of the weather, had, for two or three days past, seemed to indicate a sudden change. In about an hour's time, the fight of a large field of ice left Captain Cook no longer in doubt with regard to the cause of the brightness of the horizon. The ships, in the same afternoon, being then in the latitude of 70° 41', were close to the edge of the ice, and not able to Rand on any farther. On the eighteenth, when the veffels were in the latitude of 70° 44', the ice on the fide of them was as compact as a wall, and was judged to be at least ten or twelve feet in height. Farther to the north, it appeared to be much higher. Its furface was extremely rugged, and in different places there were feen upon it pools of water. A prodigious number of fea-horses lay upon the ice; and some of them, on the nineteenth, were procured for food, there being

^{*} The longitude was 197° 41'.

to

ors ler

at, he

nis rn

e,

at

at fo

he

or

en

a

in ess

n, fc

on

els

10

as

t.

h

d ls

es

e

g

at this time a want of fresh provisions. When CHAP. the animals were brought to the vessels, it was no small disappointment to many of the seamen, who had feasted their eyes for several days with the prospect of eating them, to find that they were not fea-cows, as they had supposed, but fea-horses. This disappointment would not have been occasioned, or the difference known, had there not happened to be one or two failors on board who had been in Greenland, and who declared what these animals were, and that it never was customary to eat of them. however, was the anxiety for a change of diet, as to overcome this prejudice. Our voyagers lived upon the fea-horfes as long as they lasted; and there were few who did not prefer them to the falt meat.

Captain Cook continued, to the twenty-ninth, to traverse the Icy Sea beyond Beering's Straight, in various directions, and through numberless obstructions and difficulties. Every day the ice increased, so as to preclude all hopes of attaining, at least during the present year, the grand object of the voyage. Indeed, the feafon was now fo far advanced, and the time in which the frost was expected to fet in was so near at hand, that it would have been totally inconfistent with prudence, to have made any farther attempts, till the next summer, at finding a passage into the Atlantic. The attention, therefore, of our Commander was now directed to other important and necessary concerns. It was of great conse-

VII. 1778.

29 July.

V

a

F

tl

W

P

C

ar

ft.

CC

di

in

W

pr

be

ab

fhi

fm

the

rar

tha

of

fea

pre

of wh

nat

for

We

VII. ors might be supplied with wood and water.

1778. But the point which principally occupied the Captain's thoughts was, how he should spend the winter, so as to make some improvements in geography and navigation, and, at the same time, to be in a condition to return to the north, in farther search of a passage, in the ensuing summer *.

Before Captain Cook proceeded far to the fouth, he employed a confiderable time in examining the fea and coasts in the neighbourhood of Beering's Straight, both on the fide of Asia and America. In this examination, he afcertained the accuracy of Beering, fo far as he went; demonstrated the errors with which Stæhlin's map of the New Northern Archipelago abounds; and made large additions to the geographical knowledge of this part of the world. "It reflects," as Mr. Coxe justly observes, "the highest honour even on the British name, that our great " navigator extended his discoveries much farther " in one expedition, and at so great a distance " from the point of his departure, than the Ruf-" fians accomplished in a long feries of years, " and in parts belonging or contiguous to their " own empire †."

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 452. 454, 455, 456, 457. 466.

⁺ Coxe's Comparative View of the Russian Discoveries, p. 16.

it-

r.

ne

bı

ts

ne

h,

ng

he

in-

of

nd

he

n.

of nd

W-

as 1

our

eat

ner

nce

uf

irs,

reir

.56,

ies,

On the fecond of October, our voyagers came C H A P. within fight of the island of Oonalashka, and anchored the next day in Samganoodha harbour. Here the first concern was to put the ships under the necessary repair; and, while the carpenters were employed in this business, one third of the people had permission, by turns, to go and collect the berries with which the island abounds, and which, though now beginning to be in a state of decay, did not a little contribute, in conjunction with spruce-beer, effectually to eradicate every feed of the scurvy that might exist in either of the vessels. Such a supply of fish was likewise procured, as not only served for present consumption, but afforded a quantity to be carried out to fea; fo that hence a confiderable faving was made of the provisions of the ships, which was at this time an object of no fmall importance.

Captain Cook, on the eighth, received, by the hands of an Oonalashka man, named Derramoushk, a very fingular present, which was that of a rye loaf, or rather a pye in the form of a loaf, for it enclosed some salmon, highly feasoned with pepper. This man had the like present for Captain Clerke, and a note for each of the two Captains, written in a character which none on board could understand. It was natural to suppose, that the presents came from some Russians in the neighbourhood; and therefore a few bottles of rum, wine, and porter, were fent to these unknown friends in return;

1778. 2 October. ❽

CHAP. it being rightly judged that such articles would VII. be more acceptable than any thing besides, which 1778. it was in the power of our navigators to bestow. Corporal Lediard of the marines *, an intelligent

* This Corporal Lediard is an extraordinary man, fome. thing of whose history cannot fail of being entertaining to my readers. In the winter of 1786, he fet out on the fingular undertaking of walking accross the continent of America; for the accomplishment of which purpose, he determined to travel by the way of Siberia, and to procure a passage from that country to the opposite American coast. Being an American by birth, and having no means of raising the money necessary for his expences, a subscription was raifed for him by Sir Joseph Banks, and some other gentlemen, amounting, in the whole, to a little more than fifty pounds. With this fum he proceeded to Hamburgh, from which place he went to Copenhagen, thence to Petersburgh, where he arrived in the beginning of March 1787. In his journey from Copenhagen to Petersburgh, finding that the gulph of Bothnia was not frozen over, he was obliged to walk round the whole of it by Tornæo. At Petersburgh he stayed till the twenty-first, of May, when he obtained leave to accompany a convoy of military stores, which at that time was proceeding to Mr. Billings, who had been his ship-mate in Captain Cooks voyage, and who was then employed by the Empress of Russia, for the purpose of making discoveries in Siberia, and on the north-west coast of America. With this convoy Mr. Lediard fet out, and in August reached the city of Irkutsk in Siberia. After that he proceeded to the town of Yakutik, where he met with Captain Billings. From this place he went back to Irkutsk, to spend a part of the winter; proposing, in the spring, to return to Yakutik, in order to proceed in fummer to Otkotik.

Hitherto Mr. Lediard had gone on prosperously, and flattered himself with the hopes of succeeding in his under-

t

h

tı

th

in

ne

pe

ha

th

he

a.

bl

an

in

tin

be vel

haj

ret En

the

man, was, at the same time, directed to accompany Derramoushk, for the purpose of gaining farther information; and with orders, if he met with any Russians, that he should endeavour to make them understand that our voyagers were Englishmen, and the friends and allies of their nation. On the tenth, the Corporal returned with three Russian seamen, or furriers, who, with of several others, resided at Egoochshac,

C H A P. VII.

10 04.

taking. But, in January last (1788) in consequence of an express from the Empress, he was arrested, and, in half an hour's time, carried away, under the guard of two foldiers and an officer, in a post-sledge, for Moscow, without his cloaths, money, and papers. From Moscow he was conveyed to the city of Moialoff in White Ruffia, and thence to the town of Tolochin in Poland. There he was informed, that her Majesty's orders were, that he was never to enter her dominions again without her express permission. During all this time, he suffered the greatest hardships, from sickness, fatigue, and want of rest; so that he was almost reduced to a skeleton. From Tolochin he made his way to Konigsberg, having had, as he fays, a miserable journey, in a miserable country, in a miserable feafon, in miserable health, and a miserable purse; and disappointed of his darling enterprize. Mr. Lediard informs Sir Joseph Banks, to whom he fent, from time to time, a full account of his transactions, that, though he had been retarded in his pursuits by malice, he had not travelled totally in vain; his observations in Asia being, perhaps, as complete as a longer visit would have rendered them. From his last letter it appears, that he proposed to return, as speedily as possible, from Konigsberg to England.

For the preceding intelligence I am wholly indebted to

the obliging information of Sir Joseph Banks.

VOL. II.

uld

ich

W.

ent

me-

the

cf

he proican

ans

rip.

me

ore

am-

and

ing

Pe-

not -

of

rst,

voy

to ok's

of

ia,

on-

city

wn

om

to

ind

er-

Q

0

0

be

ch

pa

W

CC

hi

m

C

er

ta

be

er

th

10

fu

ha

th

th

ab

W

C

00

ha

tin

ca

di

th

ne

CHAP. where they had a dwelling-house, some store.
VII. houses, and a sloop of about thirty tons burthen.
1778. One of these men was either master or mate of this vessel; another of them wrote a very good hand, and was acquainted with figures; and all

of them were fensible and well-behaved persons, who were ready to give Captain Cook every possible degree of information. The great difficulty in the reception and communication of

intelligence, arose from the want of an interpreter. On the sourteenth, a Russian landed at Oonalashka, whose name was Erasim Gregorioss

Sin Ismyloff, and who was the principal person among his countrymen in this and the neighbouring islands. Besides the intelligence which

our Commander derived from his conversations with Ismyloff, and which were carried on by

figns, affisted by figures and other characters, he obtained from him the fight of two charts,

and was permitted to copy them. Both of them were manuscripts, and bore every mark of au-

thenticity. The first included the *Penshinskian* Sea;

the coast of Tartary, down to the latitude of 41°; the Kuril islands; and the peninsula of

Kamtschatka. But it was the second chart that

was the most interesting to Captain Cook; for it comprehended all the discoveries made by

the Russians to the eastward of Kamtschatka, towards America; which, however, exclusively

of the voyages of Beering and Tscherikoff,

amounted to little or nothing. Indeed, all the

people with whom the Captain converfed at

Oonalashka, agreed in affuring him, over and over again, that they knew of no other islands, besides those which were laid down upon this chart; and that no Russian had ever seen any part of the continent of America to the northward, excepting that which lies opposite to the country of the Tschutskis.

re-

en.

of

ood

all

ns,

ery

dif.

of

ter.

at

ioff

Con

gh.

ich

ons

by

rs,

ts,

em

au-

ea;

of

of

hat

for

by

ca,

ely

ff,

he

at

When, on the twenty-first, Mr. Ismyloss took his final leave of the English navigators, our Commander entrusted to his care a letter to the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, in which was enclosed a chart of all the northern coasts the Captain had visited. It was expected that there would be an opportunity of fending this letter, in the ensuing spring, to Kamschatka or Okotsk, and that it would reach Petersburgh during the following winter. Mr. Ismyloff, who faithfully and fuccessfully discharged the trust our Commander had reposed in him, seemed to possess abilities that might entitle him to a higher station in life than that which he occupied. He had a confiderable knowledge of astronomy, and was acquainted with the most useful branches of the mathematics. Captain Cook made him a present of an Hadley's octant; and, though it was probably the first he had ever feen, he understood, in a very short time, the various uses to which that instrument can be applied.

While the ships lay at Oonalashka, our voyagers did not neglect to make a diligent enquiry into the productions of the island, and the general manners of the inhabitants. On these, as being in a

C II A P. VII. 1778.

21 00.

I

f

t

t

t

ir

d

W

ai

e

ai

e

m

1

n

W

a

tl V

5

C H A P. VII. 1778.

great measure fimilar to objects which have already been noticed, it is not necessary to enlarge. There is one circumstance, however, so honourable to the natives, that it must not be omitted. They are, to all appearance, the most peaceable and inoffensive people our Commander had ever met with; and, with respect to honesty, they might ferve as a pattern to countries that are in the highest state of civilization. A doubt is suggested, whether this disposition may not have been the consequence of their present subjection to the Russians. From the affinity which was found to subsist between the dialects of the Greenlanders and Efquimaux, and those of the inhabitants of Norton's Sound * and Oonalashka, there is strong reason to believe, that all these nations are of the same extraction; and, if that be the case, the existence of a northern communication of some kind, by fea, between the west side of America and the east fide, through Baffin's Bay, can scarcely be doubted; which communication, nevertheless, may effectually be shut up against ships, by ice and other impediments.

While the vessels lay in Samganoodha harbour, Captain Cook exerted his usual diligence in making nautical and astronomical observations. All things, on the twenty-sixth, having been gotten ready for his departure, he put to sea on that day,

26 03.

^{*} Norton's Sound is a large inlet that extends to the northward as far as the latitude of 64° 55', upon the coast of which Lieutenant King had landed, by Captain Cook's order.

and failed for the Sandwich Islands; it being his intention to spend a few months there, and then to direct his course to Kamtschatka, so as to endeavour to reach that country by the middle of May, in the ensuing summer *.

dy

ere

to

ey

nd

et

ht

he

ed,

he

uf-

ist

uj-

n's

on

ne

ce ea,

alt

bt-

ay

nd

ır,

k-

II

en

ıy,

he

ain

C H A F. VII. 1778.

26 Nov.

On the twenty-fixth of November, when the fhips had proceeded fouthward till they came to the latitude of 20° 55', land was difcovered, which proved to be an island of the name of Mowee, that had not hitherto been visited. It is one of the group of the Sandwich Islands. As it was of the last importance to procure a supply of provisions at these islands, and experience had taught our Commander; that he could have no chance of succeeding in this object, if it were left to every man's discretion to traffic for what he pleased, and in what manner he pleased; the Captain published an order, prohibiting all persons from trading, excepting such as should be appointed by himself and Captain Clerke. Even these persons were enjoined to trade only for provisions and refreshments. While our navigators lay off Mowe, which was for some days, a friendly intercourse was maintained with the inhabitants.

Another island was discovered on the thirtieth, which is called by the natives Owhyhee. As it appeared to be of greater extent and importance than any of the islands which had yet been visited in this part of the world, Captain Cook

30 Novi

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 486. 493 — 498, 505, 502. 506, 507. 509. 522 — 524. 525. 526.

VII.

fpent nearly seven weeks in sailing round, and examining its coast. Whilst he was thus employed, the inhabitants came off, from time to time, in their canoes, and readily engaged in trassic with our voyagers. In the conduct of this business, the behaviour of the islanders was more entirely free from suspicion and reserve than our Commander had ever yet experienced. Not even the people of Otaheite itself, with whom he had been so intimately and repeatedly connected, had displayed such a full considence in the integrity and good treatment of the English.

Among the articles procured from the natives, was a quantity of fugar-cane. Upon a trial, Captain Cook found that a strong decoction of it produced a very palatable beer; on which account, he ordered some more to be brewed, for general use. When, however, the barrel was broached, not one of the crew would taste of the liquor. As the Captain had no motive in preparing this beverage, but that of sparing the rum and other spirits for a colder climate, he did not exert either authority or persuasion to prevail upon the men to change their refolution; for he knew that there was no danger of the scurvy, so long as a plentiful supply could be obtained of different vegetables. Nevertheless, that he might not be disappointed in his views, he gave orders that no grog should be ferved in the ships; and he himself, together with the officers, continued to make use of the fugar-cane beer, which was much improved by

nd

y-

e,

nc fs,

ee er

le

fo

ynd

5, 1,

of ch

l,

el

te

70

n

r

d

T

e

the addition of a few hops, that chanced to be CHAR still on board. There could be no reasonable doubt of its being a very wholesome liquor; and yet the inconsiderate crew alleged that it would be injurious to their health. No people are more averse to every kind of innovation than feamen, and their prejudices are extremely difficult to be conquered. It was, however, by acting contrary to these prejudices, and by various deviations from established practice, that Captain Cook had been enabled to preferve his men from that dreadful distemper, the scurvy, which, perhaps, has destroyed more of our failors, in their peaceful voyages, than have fallen by the enemy in military expeditions.

As the Captain was purfuing his examination of the coast of Owhyhee, it having fallen calm at one o'clock in the morning of the nineteenth of December, the Resolution was left to the mercy of a north-easterly swell, which impelled her fast towards the land; so that, long before day-break, lights were feen from the land, which was not more than a league distant. The night, at the same time, was dark, with thunder, lightning, and rain. As foon as it was light, a dreadful furf, within half a league of the veffel, appeared breaking from the shore; and it was evident that our navigators had been in the most perilous fituation; nor was the danger yet over; for, in confequence of the veering of the wind, they were but just able to keep their distance from the coast. What rendered their situation

1778.

19 Dec.

1

t

ſ

1

n

n

V

to

A

tl

e

fu

n

jn

0

th

h

be

tl

at

С н д Р. VII, more alarming was, that a rope of the main-top-fail having given way, this occasioned the fail to be rent in two. In the same manner, the two top-gallant sails gave way, though they were not half worn out. However, a savourable opportunity was seized of getting others to the yards; and the Resolution again proceeded in safety.

1779, 16 Jan.

On the fixteenth of January 1779, canoes arrived in fuch numbers from all parts, that there were not fewer than a thousand about the two ships, most of them crowded with people, and well laden with hogs, and other productions of the island. It was a satisfactory proof of their friendly intentions, that there was not a fingle person amongst them who had with him a weapon of any kind; trade and curiofity alone appearing to be the motives which actuated their conduct. Among fuch multitudes, however, as, at times, were on board, it will not be deemed furprizing, that fome should betray a thievish disposition. One of them took out of the Resolution a boat's rudder; and made off with it so speedily, that it could not be recovered. Captain Cook judged this to be a favourable opportunity of shewing to these people the use of fire-arms; and accordingly he ordered two or three musquets, and as many four-pounders, to be fired over the canoe which carried off the rudder. It not being intended that any of the shot should take effect, the furrounding multitude of the natives feemed to be more surprized than terrified.

Mr. Bligh having been fent to examine a neighbouring bay, reported, on his return, that it had good anchorage and fresh water, and that it was in an accessible situation. Into this bay, therefore, the Captain resolved to carry the ships, in order to resit, and to obtain every refreshment which the place could afford. As night approached, the greater part of the Indians retired on shore; but numbers of them requested permission to sleep on board; in which request, curiosity (at least with regard to several of them) was not their sole motive; for it was sound, the next morning, that various things were missing; on which account our Commander determined not to entertain so many persons another night.

p-

ail

70

re le

ne

in

vre

o

of

Ir

le

n

S

ıt

d

S

d

On the seventeenth, the ships came to an anchor in the bay which had been examined by Mr. Bligh, and which is called Karakakooa by the inhabitants. At this time, the vessels continued to be much crowded with natives, and were furrounded with a multitude of canoes. Captain Cook, in the whole course of his voyages, had never feen fo numerous a body of people affembled in one place. For, besides those who had come off to the English in their canoes, all the shore of the bay was covered with spectators, and many hundreds were fwimming round the ships like shoals of fish. Our navigators could not avoid being greatly impressed with the singularity of this scene; and perhaps there were few on board that now lamented the want of fuccess which had attended the endeavours of getting homeward.

C H A P. VII.

17 Jan.

VII.

the last summer, by a northern passage. "To "this disappointment," says the Captain, "we "owed our having it in our power to revisit the "Sandwich Islands, and to enrich our voyage with "a discovery which, though the last, seemed,

" in many respects, to be the most important that had hitherto been made by Europeans,

" throughout the extent of the Pacific Ocean *."

Such is the sentence that concludes our Commander's journal: and the satisfaction with which this sentence appears to have been written, cannot sail of striking the mind of every reader. Little did Captain Cook then imagine, that a discovery which promised to add no small honour to his name, and to be productive of very agreeable consequences, should be so fatal in the result. Little did he think, that the island of Owhyhee was destined to be the last scene of his exploits, and the cause of his destruction.

The reception which the Captain met with from the natives, on his proceeding to anchor in Karakakooa Bay, was flattering in the highest degree. They came off from the shore in astonishing numbers, and expressed their joy by singing and shouting, and by exhibiting a variety of wild and extravagant gestures. Pareea, a young man of great authority, and Kaneena, another Chief, had already attached themselves to our Commander, and were very useful in keeping their countrymen from being troublesome.

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 532. 535, 536, 537, 538. 540 — 548, 549.

Ó e

e

h

h

t

e

t.

e

,

During the long cruize of our navigators off CHAP. the island of Owhyhee, the inhabitants had almost univerfally behaved with great fairness and honefty in their dealings, and had not shewn the flightest propensity to theft: and this was a fact the more extraordinary, as those with whom our people had hitherto maintained any intercourse, were of the lowest rank, being either servants or fishermen. But, after the arrival of the Resolution and Discovery in Karakakooa Bay, the case was greatly altered. The immense crowd of iflanders that blocked up every part of the ships, not only afforded frequent opportunities of pilfering without risk of detection; but held out, even if they should be detected, a prospect of escaping with impunity, from the superiority of their numbers to that of the English. Another circumstance, to which the alteration in the conduct of the natives might be ascribed, arose from the presence and encouragement of their Chiefs, into whose possession the booty might be traced, and whom there was reason to suspect of being the instigators of the depredations that were committed.

Soon after the Resolution had gotten into her station, Pareea and Kaneena brought on board a third Chief, named Koah, who was represented as being a priest, and as having, in his early youth, been a diftinguished warrior. In the evening, Captain Cook, attended by Mr. Bayley and Mr. King, accompanied Koah on shore. Upon this occasion, the Captain was received with very peculiar and extraordinary ceremonies; with

VII. 1779. VII.

ceremonies that indicated the highest respect on the part of the natives, and which, indeed, seemed to fall little short of adoration.

One of the principal objects that engaged our Commander's attention at Owhyhee, was the falting of hogs for fea-store; in which his success was far more compleat than had been attained in any former attempt of the fame kind. It doth not appear that experiments relative to this subject had been made by the navigators of any nation before Captain Cook. His first trials were in 1774, during his fecond voyage round the world; when his fuccess, though very imperfect, was, nevertheless, sufficient to encourage his farther efforts, in a matter of fo much importance. As the prefent voyage was likely to be protracted a year beyond the time for which the ships were victualled, he was under a necessity of providing, by fome fuch method, for the subfistence of the crews, or of relinquishing the profecution of his discoveries. Accordingly, he lost no opportunity of renewing his attempts; and the event answered his most fanguine expectations. Captain King brought home with him fome of the pork which was pickled at Owhyhee in January 1779; and, upon its being tafted by feveral persons in England about Christmas 1780, it was found to be perfectly found and wholefome*. It feemed to be destined, that in every instance Captain Cook

h

12

f

a

0

T

C

11

c b o

e

^{*} An account of the process may be seen in Captain King's Voyage, p. 12.

should excel all who had gone before him, in

promoting the purposes of navigation.

n

ır

C

s

n

d

r-

n

r-

,

ır l-

d

h

0

n

VII. 1779. 26 Jan.

CHAP.

On the twenty-fixth, the Captain had his first interview with Terreeoboo, the king of the island. The meeting was conducted with a variety of ceremonies, among which, the custom of making an exchange of names, which, amongst all the islanders of the Pacific Ocean is the strongest pledge of friendship, was observed. When the formalities of the interview were over, our Commander carried Terreeoboo, and as many Chiefs as the pinnace could hold, on board the Refolution. They were received, on this occasion, with every mark of respect that could be shewn them; and, in return for a beautiful and splendid feathered cloak which the king had bestowed on Captain Cook, the Captain put a linen shirt on his majesty, and girt his own hanger round him.

In the progress of the intercourse which was maintained between our voyagers and the natives, the quiet and inossensive behaviour of the latter took away every apprehension of danger; so that the English trusted themselves among them at all times, and in all situations. The instances of kindness and civility which our people experienced from them were so numerous, that they could not easily be recounted. A society of priests, in particular, displayed a generosity and muniscence, of which no equal example had hitherto been given: for they surnished a constant supply of hogs and vegetables to our navigators, without ever demanding a return, or even hinting at it in the

C H A P. VII 1779.

most distant manner. All this was faid to be done at the expence of a great man among them, who was at the head of their body, whose name was Kaoo, and who on other occasions manifested his attachment to the English. There was not always fo much reason to be satisfied with the conduct of the warrior Chiefs, or Earees, as with that of the priests. Indeed, the satisfaction that was derived from the usual gentleness and hospitality of the inhabitants, was frequently interrupted by the propenfity of many of them to flealing; and this circumstance was the more distressing, as it fometimes obliged our Commander and the other officers to have recourse to acts of severity, which they would willingly have avoided, if the necesfity of the case had not absolutely called for them.

Though the kind and liberal behaviour of the natives continued without remission, Terreeoboo, and his Chiefs, began, at length, to be very inquisitive about the time in which our voyagers were to take their departure. Nor will this be deemed furprizing, when it is considered that, during fixteen days in which the English had been in the bay of Karakakooa, they had made an enormous confumption of hogs and vegetables. It did not appear, however, that Terreeoboo had any other view in his enquiries, than a defire of making fufficient preparation for dismissing our navigators with prefents, fuitable to the respect and kindness towards them which he had always displayed. For, on his being informed that they were to leave the island in a day or two, it was observed

he

that a kind of proclamation was immediately made, through the villages, requiring the people to bring in their hogs and vegetables, for the king to prefent to the Orono *, on his quitting the country. Accordingly, on the third of February, being the day preceding the time which had been fixed for the failing of the ships, Terreeoboo invited Captain Cook and Mr. King to attend him to the place where Kaoo refided. On their arrival, they found the ground covered with parcels of cloth, at a small distance from which lay an immense quantity of vegetables; and near them was a large herd of hogs. At the close of the vifit, the greater part of the cloth, and the whole of the hogs and vegetables, were given by Terreeoboo to the Captain and Mr. King; who were astonished at the value and magnificence of the prefent , for it far exceeded every thing of the kind which they had feen either at the Friendly or Society Islands †. Mr. King had in fo high a degree conciliated the affections, and gained the esteem, of the inhabitants of Owhyhee, that, with offers of the most flattering nature, he was strongly folicited to remain in the country. Terreeoboo and Kaoo waited upon Captain Cook, whose fon they supposed Mr. King to be, with a formal request that

e

1-

e

n

1-

d

y :-

i-

d

ys

re

ed

C H A P. VII. 1779.

3 Feb.

* Orono was a title of high honour, which had been bestowed on Captain Cook.

† When the Resolution had sailed from Karakakooa Bay, Terreeoboo gave a fresh proof of his friendship for Captain Cook, by fending after him a large present of hogs and vegetables.

VII.

4 Feb.

❽

he might be left behind. To avoid giving a positive refusal to an offer which was so kindly intended, the Captain told them, that he could not part with Mr. King at that time, but that, on his return to the island in the next year, he would endeavour to settle the matter to their satisfaction.

Early, on the fourth, the ships sailed out of Karakakooa Bay, being followed by a large number of canoes. It was our Commander's design, before he visited the other islands, to finish the survey of Owhyhee, in hopes of meeting with a road better sheltered than the bay he had just left. In case of not succeeding in this respect, he purposed to take a view of the south-east part of Mowee, where he was informed that he should

find an excellent harbour *.

The circumstances which brought Captain Cook back to Karakakooa Bay, and the unhappy confequences that followed, I shall give from Mr. Samwell's narrative of his death. This narrative was, in the most obliging manner, communicated to me in manuscript, by Mr. Samwell, with entire liberty to make such use of it as I should judge proper. Upon a perusal of it, its importance struck me in so strong a light, that I wished to have it separately laid before the world. Accordingly, with Mr. Samwell's concurrence, I procured its publication, that, if any objections should be made to it, I might be able to notice

them

cc

"

66

66

23

66

66

the

wh

^{*} Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, vol. iii. written by Mr. King, p. 1 - 31.

them in my own work. As the narrative hath continued for more than two years unimpeached and uncontradicted, I esteem myself fully authorized to infert it in this place, as containing the most complete and authentic account of the melancholy catastrophe, which, at Owhyhee, befel our illustrious navigator and Commander.

VII. 1779.

fi-

d

ot

on

ld

n.

of

m-

n,

he

a

ft.

ır-

of

ld

ok

n-

Îr.

ve

at-

th

ld

rted

G-

I

ns

CE

Ír.

6 Feb.

" On the fixth, we were overtaken by a gale " of wind; and the next night, the Resolution " had the misfortune of springing the head of her " foremast, in such a dangerous manner, that " Captain Cook was obliged to return to Kera-" gegooah *, in order to have it repaired; for " we could find no other convenient harbour on " the island. The same gale had occasioned much " diffress among some canoes, that had paid us " a visit from the shore. One of them, with two " men and a child on board, was picked up by " the Resolution, and rescued from destruction: " the men, having toiled hard all night, in attempt-" ing to reach the land, were fo much exhausted, "that they could hardly mount the ship's side. "When they got upon the quarter-deck, they " burst into tears, and seemed much affected with

* It is proper to take notice, that Mr Samwell spells the names of feveral persons and places differently from what is done in the history of the voyage. For instance,

Karakakooa he calls Ke, rag, e, goo, ah, Terreeoboo Kariopoo, Kowrowa Kavaroah, Kanteecabareeah Kaneekapo, herei, Maiha maiha Ka, mea, mea. VOL. II.

VII.

" the dangerous fituation from which they had "escaped; but the little child appeared lively and cheerful. One of the Resolution's boats was also so fortunate as to save a man and two women, whose canoe had been upset by the

" women, whole canoe had been uplet by the violence of the waves. They were brought on

6

41

"

"

66

66

66

23

46

66

"

"

66

66

66

"

"

"

66

"

"

" board, and, with the others, partook of the

so Feb.

" kindness and humanity of Captain Cook. " On the morning of Wednesday, the tenth, " we were within a few miles of the harbour; " and were foon joined by feveral canees, in which " appeared many of our old acquaintance, who " feemed to have come to welcome us back. " Among them was Cooaha, a priest: he had " brought a small pig, and some cocoa-nuts in " his hand, which, after having chaunted a few " fentences, he presented to Captain Clerke "He then left us, and hastened on board the " Resolution, to perform the same friendly cere-" mony before Captain Cook. Having but light " winds all that day, we could not gain the har-" bour. In the afternoon, a Chief of the first " rank, and nearly related to Kariopoo, paid " us a visit on board the Discovery. His name " was Kameamea: he was dreffed in a very " rich feathered cloak, which he seemed to have " brought for fale, but would part with it for " nothing except iron daggers. These, the Chiefs, " some time before our departure, had preferred " to every other article; for, having received a " plentiful fupply of hatchets and other tools, " they began to collect a store of warlike instru-

" ments. Kameamea procured nine daggers for CHAP. " his cloak; and, being pleafed with his recep-VII. " tion, he and his attendants flept on board that 1779. " night.

0

n

e

١,

h

0 ζ.

d

n

V

e

ne

e-

nt

rft

id

ne ry

ve

or

s,

ed

2

ls,

ru-

II Feb.

" In the morning of the eleventh of February, " the ships anchored again in Keragegooah bay, " and preparation was immediately made for " landing the Resolution's foremast. We were visit-" ed but by few of the Indians, because there were " but few in the bay. On our departure, those " belonging to other parts, had repaired to their " feveral habitations, and were again to collect " from various quarters, before we could expect " to be furrounded by fuch multitudes as we had " once feen in that harbour. In the afternoon, I " walked about a mile into the country, to visit " an Indian friend, who had, a few days before, " come near twenty miles, in a small canoe, to " fee me, while the ship lay becalmed. As the " canoe had not left us long before a gale of " wind came on, I was alarmed for the confe-" quence: however, I had the pleasure to find " that my friend had escaped unhurt, though " not without some difficulties. I take notice " of this short excursion, merely because it af-" forded me an opportunity of observing, that " there appeared no change in the disposition or " behaviour of the inhabitants. I faw nothing " that could induce me to think, that they were " displeased with our return, or jealous of the " intention of our fecond visit. On the contrary, " that abundant good-nature which had always

R 2

" characterised them, seemed still to glow in every bosom, and to animate every counten-VIL " ance * 1779.

13 Feb.

" The next day, February the twelfth, the " ships were put under a taboo, by the Chiefs; " a folemnity, it feems, that was requifite to be " observed before Kariopoo, the king, paid his " first visit to Captain Cook, after his return. " He waited upon him the fame day, on board " the Refolution, attended by a large train, " fome of which bore the prefents defigned for " Captain Cook; who received him in his usual " friendly manner, and gave him feveral articles " in return. This amicable ceremony being " fettled, the taboo was dissolved; matters went " on in the usual train; and the next day, " February the thirteenth, we were visited by " the natives in great numbers: the Refolution's " mast was landed, and the astronomical obser-"vatories erected on their former fituation. I " landed, with another gentleman, at the town " of Kavaroah, where we found a great number

* Mr. King relates, that our voyagers, upon coming to anchor, were furprized to find their reception very different from what it had been on their first arrival. acknowledges, however, that the unfulpicious conduct of Terreeoboo, who, the next morning, came immediately to) visit Captain Cook, and the consequent return of the natives to their former friendly intercourse with the English, are strong proofs that they neither meant nor apprehended any change of conduct. "Things," fays Mr. King, "went on " in their usual quiet course, till the afternoon of the "thirteenth." Voyage, ubi supra, p. 36, 37, 38.

13.

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK.

in

n.

he

s;

be

115

n.

rd

1,

or

al

es

ıg

nt

y

r-

I

n

T

g

y

" of canoes, just arrived from different parts of CHAP. " the Island, and the Indians busy in constructa ing temporary huts on the beach, for their " residence during the stay of the ships. On our " return on board the Discovery, we learned, " that an Indian had been detected in stealing " the armourer's tongs from the forge, for " which he received a pretty fevere flogging, " and was fent out of the ship. Notwithstanding " the example made of this man, in the afternoon " another had the audacity to fnatch the tongs " and a chiffel from the same place, with which " he jumped overboard, and fwam for the shore. "The master and a midshipman were instantly " dispatched after him, in the small cutter. The " Indian feeing himself pursued, made for a " canoe; his countrymen took him on board, " and paddled as fwift as they could towards the " shore; we fired feveral muskets at them, but " to no effect, for they foon got out of the reach " of our shot, Pareah, one of the Chiefs, who " was at that time on board the Discovery, " understanding what had happened, immediate-" ly went ashore, promising to bring back the " stolen goods. Our boat was so far distanced, " in chasing the canoe which had taken the thief " on board, that he had time to make his escape " into the country. Captain Cook, who was " then ashore, endeavoured to intercept his " landing; but, it feems, that he was led out of " the way by some of the natives, who had " officiously intruded themselves as guides. As

1779

R 3

C H A P. VII.

" the master was approaching near the landing. " place, he was met by some of the Indians in a " canoe: they had brought back the tongs and " chiffel, together with another article, that we " had not missed, which happened to be the lid " of the water-cask. Having recovered these " things, he was returning on board, when he " was met by the Resolution's pinnace, with " five men in her, who, without any orders, " had come from the observatories to his affistance. " Being thus unexpectedly reinforced, he thought " himself strong enough to insist upon having " the thief, or the canoe which took him in, " delivered up as reprizals. With that view he " turned back; and having found the canoe on st the beach, he was preparing to launch it into " the water, when Pareah made his appearance, " and infifted upon his not taking it away, as it " was his property. The officer not regarding " him, the Chief seized upon him, pinioned his " arms behind, and held him by the hair of " his head; on which, one of the failors struck " him with an oar: Pareah instantly quitted the " officer, fnatched the oar out of the man's " hand, and fnapped it in two across his knee. " At length the multitude began to attack our " people with stones. They made some resist-" ance, but were foon overpowered, and obliged " to fwim for fafety to the fmall cutter, which " lay farther out than the pinnace. The officers, " not being expert swimmers, retreated to a " fmall rock in the water, where they were

66

"

"

..

..

66

66

66

66

"

66

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK.

a

ıd

re

id

ſe

ne

th

s,

e.

nt

g

,

ne

n

0

it

15

of

k

e

S

r

d

" closely pursued by the Indians. One man CHAP. " darted a broken oar at the master; but his " foot flipping at the time, he missed him, which " fortunately faved that officer's life. At last, " Pareah interfered, and put an end to their " violence. The gentlemen, knowing that his " presence was their only defence against the " fury of the natives, entreated him to stay with " them, till they could get off in the boats; but " that he refused, and left them. The master " went to feek affistance from the party at the " observatories; but the midshipman chose to " remain in the pinnace. He was very rudely " treated by the mob, who plundered the boat " of every thing that was loofe on board, and "then began to knock her to pieces, for the " fake of the ironwork; but Pareah fortunately " returned in time to prevent her destruction. " He had met the other gentleman on his way " to the observatories, and, suspecting his errand, " had forced him to return. He dispersed the " crowd again, and defired the gentlemen to " return on board: they represented, that all the " oars had been taken out of the boat; on which " he brought some of them back, and the gen-" tlemen were glad to get off, without farther " molestation. They had not proceeded far, " before they were overtaken by Pareah, in a " canoe: he delivered the midshipman's cap, " which had heen taken from him in the scuffle, "joined noses with them, in token of recon-

VII. 37794 GHAP; VII. 1779.

" ciliation, and was anxious to know, if Captain "Cook would kill him for what had happened. "They affured him of the contrary, and made " figns of friendship to him in return. He then " left them, and paddled over to the town of "Kavaroah, and that was the last time we ever " faw him. Captain Cook returned on board "foon after, much displeased with the whole of

" this difagreeable business; and the same night

" fent a lieutenant on board the Discovery to " learn the particulars of it, as it had originated

" in that ship.

" It was remarkable, that in the midst of the " hurry and confusion attending this affair, Kan-" ynah (a Chief who had always been on terms " particularly friendly with us) came from the " fpot where it happened, with a hog to fell on " board the Discovery: it was of an extraor-"dinary large fize, and he demanded for it a " pahowa, or dagger, of an unufual length. He " pointed to us, that it must be as long as his " arm. Captain Clerke not having one of that " length, told him, he would get one made for " him by the morning; with which being fatis-" fied, he left the hog, and went ashore without " making any stay with us, It will not be " altogether foreign to the subject, to mention a " circumstance, that happened to-day on board " the Resolution. An Indian Chief asked Captain " Cook at his table, if he was a Tata Toa " which means a fighting man, or a foldier. Being answered in the affirmative, he desired

in

d.

de

en

of

er

rd of

ht

to

ed

ne

n-

ns

n

r-

a

15

at

r

5-

t

0

a

d

n

" to fee his wounds: Captain Cook held out his CHAP. " right-hand, which had a fcar upon it, divi-" ding the thumb from the finger, the whole " length of the metacarpal bones. The Indian, " being thus convinced of his being a Toa, put " the same question to another gentleman present, " but he happened to have none of those dif-" tinguishing marks: the Chief then faid, that he " himself was a Toa, and shewed the scars of " fome wounds he had received in battle. Those " who were on duty at the observatories, were " disturbed, during the night, with shrill and " melancholy founds, issuing from the adjacent " villages, which they took to be the lamenta-" tions of the women. Perhaps the quarrel be-" tween us, might have filled their minds with " apprehensions, for the safety of their husbands: " but, be that as it may, their mournful cries " struck the fentinels with unufual awe and terror. " To widen the breach between us, some of " the Indians, in the night, took away the " Discovery's large cutter, which lay swamped " at the buoy of one of her anchors: they had " carried her off so quietly, that we did not " miss her till the morning, Sunday, February " the fourteenth. Captain Clerke lost no time in " waiting upon Captain Cook, to acquaint him " with the accident: he returned on board, " with orders for the launch and small cutter to " go, under the command of the second lieuten-" ant, and lie off the east point of the bay, in " order to intercept all canoes that might attempt

VII. 1779-

14 Feb.

CHAP. VII. 1779.

" to get out; and, if he found it necessary, to " fire upon them. At the same time, the third " lieutenant of the Resolution, with the launch " and small cutter, was fent on the same service. " to the opposite point of the bay; and the " master was dispatched in the large cutter, in " pursuit of a double canoe, already under " fail, making the best of her way out of the harbour. He foon came up with her, and by " firing a few mulkets, drove her on shore, and " the Indians left her: this happened to be the « canoe of Omea, a man who bore the title of " Orono. He was on board himself, and it " would have been fortunate, if our people had " fecured him, for his person was held as facred " as that of the king. During this time, Captain " Cook was preparing to go ashore himself, at " the town of Kavaroak, in order to fecure the " person of Kariopoo, before he should have " time to withdraw himself to another part of " the island, out of our reach. This appeared " the most effectual step that could be taken on " the present occasion, for the recovery of the " boat. - It was the measure he had invariably " purfued, in fimilar cases, at other islands in "these seas, and it had always been attended with the defired success: in fact, it would be " difficult to point out any other mode of " proceeding on these emergencies, likely to " attain the object in view *. We had reason to

S

CC

CC

cc

"

...

cc

CC

**

CC

th

ac

in at V

^{*} Mr. King acknowledges, that he was always fearful,

d

h

e,

e

n

er

e

y

e

ρf

it

d

n

it

e

e

of

d

n

C

11

e

0

9

CHAP.

VII.

1779.

" fuppose, that the king and his attendants had " fled when the alarm was first given: in that " case, it was Captain Cook's intention to secure " the large canoes which were hauled up on the " beach. He left the ship about seven o'clock, " attended by the lieutenant of marines, a fer-" jeant, corporal, and feven private men: the " pinnace's crew were also armed, and under " the command of Mr. Roberts. As they rowed " towards the shore, Captain Cook ordered the " launch to leave her station at the west point of " the bay, in order to affift his own boat. This " is a circumstance worthy of notice; for it " clearly shews, that he was not unapprehensive " of meeting with resistance from the natives, " or unmindful of the necessary preparation for " the fafety of himself and his people. I will " venture to fay, that, from the appearance of " things just at that time, there was not one, " befide himfelf, who judged that fuch precaution " was absolutely requisite: so little did his con-" duct on the occasion, bear the marks of " rashness, or a precipitate self-confidence! He " landed, with the marines, at the upper end " of the town of Kavaroah: the Indians imme-" diately flocked round, as usual, and shewed " him the customary marks of respect, by pro-

that the degree of confidence which Captain Cook had acquired from his long and uninterrupted course of success, in his transactions with the natives of these seas, might, at some unlucky moment, put him too much off his guard. Voyage, ubi supra, p. 55.

"

66

"

"

46

"

"

"

66

66

VII.

" strating themselves before him. There were no " figns of hostilities, or much alarm among " them. Captain Cook, however, did not feem " willing to trust to appearances; but was parti-" cularly attentive to the disposition of the mari-" nes, and to have them kept clear of the crowd. "He first enquired for the king's fons, two "youths who were much attached to him, and " generally his companions on board. Messengers " being fent for them, they foon came to him, " and informing him that their father was afleep, " at a house not far from them, he accompanied " them thither, and took the marines along " with them. As he passed along, the natives " every where prostrated themselves before him, " and feemed to have loft no part of that respect " they had always shewn to his person. He was " joined by feveral Chiefs, among whom was " Kanynah, and his brother Koohowrooah. They " kept the crowd in order, according to their " usual custom; and, being ignorant of his in-" tention in coming on shore, frequently asked " him, if he wanted any hogs, or other provi-" frons; he told them that he did not, and that " his business was to see the king. When he " arrived at the house, he ordered some of the " Indians to go in, and inform Kariopoo, that " he waited without to fpeak with him. They " came out two or three times, and instead of " returning any answer from the king, prefented " fome pieces of red cloth to him, which made " Captain Cook suspect that he was not in the

no

ng

m

ti-

ri-

d.

vo nd

ers

n,

p,

ed ng

es

n,

ct

as

as_

y

ır

1-

d

1-

ıt

e

t

f

e

"house; he therefore desired the lieutenant of " marines to go in. The lieutenant found the old "man just awaked from sleep, and seemingly " alarmed at the message; but he came out " without helitation. Captain Cook took him by " the hand, and in a friendly manner asked him " to go on board, to which he very readily " confented. Thus far matters appeared in a " favourable train, and the natives did not feem " much alarmed or apprehensive of hostility on " our fide; at which Captain Cook expressed " himself a little furprized, faying, that as the " inhabitants of that town appeared innocent of " stealing the cutter, he should not molest them, " but that he must get the king on board. Ka-" riopoo fat down before his door, and was " furrounded by a great crowd: Kanynah and his " brother were both very active in keeping order " among them. In a little time, however, the " Indians were observed arming themselves with " long spears, clubs, and daggers, and putting " on thick mats, which they use as armour. This " hostile appearance increased, and became more " alarming, on the arrival of two men in a canoe " from the opposite side of the bay, with the " news of a Chief, called Kareemoo, having been " killed by one of the Difcovery's boats. In their " passage across, they had also delivered this " account to each of the ships. Upon that inform-" ation, the women, who were fitting upon the " beach at their breakfasts, and conversing fami-" liarly with our people in the boats, retired,

C H A P. VII. 1779. С н A Р. VII. 1779.

" and a confused murmur spread through the " crowd. An old priest came to Captain Cook, " with a cocoa-nut in his hand, which he held " out to him as a present, at the same time sing-" ing very loud. He was often defired to be filent, " but in vain: he continued importunate and " troublesome, and there was no such thing as " getting rid of him or his noise: it seemed as if " he meant to divert their attention from his " countrymen, who were growing more tumultu-" ous, and arming themselves in every quarter. " Captain Cook, being at the same time sur-" rounded by a great crowd, thought his fituation " rather hazardous: he therefore ordered the lieu-" tenant of marines to march his fmall party to " the water-fide, where the boats lay within a " few yards of the shore: the Indians readily " made a lane for them to pass, and did not " offer to interrupt them. The distance they had " to go might be about fifty or fixty yards; Cap-" tain Cook followed, having hold of Kariopoo's " hand, who accompanied him very willingly: he " was attended by his wife, two fons, and feveral. " Chiefs. The troublesome old priest followed, " making the same savage noise. Keowa, the youn-" ger fon, went directly into the pinnace, expect-" ing his father to follow: but just as he arrived " at the water-side, his wife threw her arms about " his neck, and, with the affistance of two Chiefs, " forced him to fit down by the fide of a double " canoe. Captain Cook expostulated with them,

" but to no purpose: they would not suffer the "king to proceed, telling him, that he would VII. " be put to death if he went on board the ship. 1779.

" Kariopoo, whose conduct feemed entirely re-" figned to the will of others, hung down his

ie

ld

g-

t,

d

as

if

15

1.

r.

r-

n

u.

0

y

ot

d

2-

al.

d

t

" head, and appeared much distressed. " While the king was in this fituation, a Chief, " well known to us, of the name of Coho, was " observed lurking near, with an iron dagger, " partly concealed under his cloak, feemingly, " with the intention of stabbing Captain Cook, " or the lieutenant of marines. The latter propof-" ed to fire at him, but Captain Cook would not " permit it. Coho closing upon them, obliged " the officer to strike him with his piece, which " made him retire. Another Indian laid hold of " the ferjeant's musquet, and endeavoured to " wrench it from him, but was prevented by the " lieutenant's making a blow at him. Captain " Cook, feeing the tumult increase, and the In-" dians growing more daring and resolute, observ-" ed, that if he were to take the king off by " force, he could not do it without facrificing the " lives of many of his people. He then paused a " little, and was on the point of giving his orders " to reimbark, when a man threw a stone at him; " which he returned with a discharge of small shot " (with which one barrel of his double piece was " loaded). The man, having a thick mat before " him, received little or no burt: he brandished " his spear, and threatened to dart it at Captain " Cook, who being still unwilling to take away

"

"

66

66

66

"

66

"

"

66

66

66

" t

C H A P. VII.

" his life, instead of firing with ball, knocked him " down with his mufquet. He expostulated strongly " with the most forward of the crowd, upon their " turbulent behaviour. He had given up all thoughts " of getting the king on board, as it appeared imprac-" ticable; and his care was then only to act on the " defensive; and to secure a safe embarkation for his " fmall party, which was closely pressed by a body of " feveral thousand people. Keowa, the king's son, " who was in the pinnace, being alarmed on hearing "the first firing, was, at his own entreaty, put on " shore again; for even at that time, Mr. Roberts, " who commanded her, did not apprehend that " Captain Cook's person was in any danger: other-" wife he would have detained the prince, which, " no doubt, would have been a great check on " the Indians. One man was observed, behind a " double canoe, in the action of darting his fpear " at Captain Cook, who was forced to fire at him " in his own defence, but happened to kill ano-"ther close to him, equally forward in the tu-" mult: the ferjeant observing that he had missed " the man he aimed at, received orders to fire at " him, which he did, and killed him. By this " time, the impetuolity of the Indians was fo-" mewhat repressed; they fell back in a body, and " feemed staggered: but being pushed on by those " behind, they returned to the charge, and pour-" ed a volley of stones among the marines, who, " without waiting for orders, returned it with a " general discharge of musquetry, which was in-" stantly followed by a fire from the boats. At this

" this Captain Cook was heard to express his afto-" nishment: he waved his hand to the boats, cal-" led to them to cease firing, and to come nearer " in to receive the marines. Mr. Roberts imme-" diately brought the pinnace as close to the shore " as he could, without grounding, notwith-" standing the showers of stones that fell among " the people: but -, the lieutenant, who com-" manded in the launch, instead of pulling in to " the affistance of Captain Cook, withdrew his " boat farther off, at the moment that every thing " feems to have depended upon the timely exer-" trons of those in the boats. By his own ac-" count, he mistook the signal: but be that as it " may, this circumstance appears to me, to have " decided the fatal turn of the affair, and to have " removed every chance which remained with " Captain Cook, of escaping with his life. " business of faving the marines out of the water, " in consequence of that, fell altogether upon the " pinnace; which thereby became fo much crowded, that the crew were, in a great measure, " prevented from using their fire-arms, or giving " what affiftance they otherwise might have done, " to Captain Cook; fo that he feems, at the most " critical point of time, to have wanted the affift-" ance of both boats, owing to the removal of " the launch. For, notwithstanding that they kept " up a fire on the crowd, from the situation to " which they removed in that boat, the fatal con-"fusion which ensued on her being withdrawn, " to fay the least of it, must have prevented the Vol. II

1

Снар. VII. 1779. VII. 1779.

" full effect, that the prompt co-operation of the " two boats, according to Captain Cook's orders " must have had, towards the preservation of him-" felf and his people *. At that time, it was to " the boats alone, that Captain Cook had to look " for his fafety; for, when the marines had fired, the " Indians rushed among them, and forced them " into the water, where four of them were killed: " their lieutenant was wounded, but fortunately " escaped, and was taken up by the pinnace. " Captain Cook was then the only one remaining " on the rock: he was observed making for the " pinnace, holding his left hand against the back " of his head, to guard it from the stones, and " carrying his mufquet under the other arm. An " Indian was feen following him, but with cau-" tion and timidity; for he stopped once or twice, " as if undetermined to proceed. At last he " advanced upon him unawares, and with a large " club t, or common stake, gave him a blow on

* I have been informed, on the best authority, that, in the opinion of Captain Philips, who commanded the marines, and whose judgment must be of the greatest weight, it is extremely doubtful whether any thing could successfully have been done to preserve the life of Captain Cook, even if no mistake had been committed on the part of the launch.

† "I have heard one of the gentlemen who where prefent fay, that the first injury he received was from a dagger, as it is represented in the Voyage; but, from the account of many others, who where also eye-witnesses, I am confident, in saying, that he was first ftruck with a club. I was afterwards confirmed in this, he

ers

m-

to

he

d:

ly

ce.

ng

he ck

nd

An

lu-

ce,

ge

at,

the

test

uld

ap-

re-

1 3

om

vit-

irst

is,

" the back of the head, and then precipitately re-The stroke seemed to have stunned " Captain Cook: he staggered a few paces, then " fell on his hand and one knee, and dropped his " musquet. As he was rising, and before he could " recover his feet, another Indian stabbed him in " the back of the neck with an iron dagger. " then fell into a bite of water about knee deep, " where others crowded upon him, and endea-" voured to keep him under: but struggling very " strongly with them, he got his head up, and " casting his look towards the pinnace, seemed to " folicit assistance. Though the boat was not " above five or fix yards diftant from him, yet from " the crowded and confused state of the crew, it " feems, it was not in their power to fave him. " The Indians got him under again, but in deeper " water: he was, however, able to get his head " up once more, and being almost spent in the " struggle, he naturally turned to the rock, and " was endeavouring to support himself by it, when " a favage gave him a blow with a club, and he was feen alive no more. They hauled him up " lifeless on the rocks, where they seemed to take " a favage pleafure in using every barbarity to his

С н а Р. VII. 1779:

by Kaireekea, the priest, who particularly mentioned the name of the man who gave him the blow, as well, as that of the Chief who afterwards struck him with the dagger. This is a point not worth disputing about: I mention it, as being solicitous to be accurate in this account, even in circumstances, of themselves, not very material."

VII.

" dead body, fnatching the daggers out of each other's hands, to have the horrid fatisfaction of piercing the fallen victim of their barbatrous rage.

"I need make no reflection on the great loss we fuffered on this occasion, or attempt to describe what we felt. It is enough to say, that no man was ever more beloved or admired: and it is truly painful to reflect, that he seems to have fallen a facrifice merely for want of being properly supported; a sate, singularly to be lamented, as having sallen to his lot, who had ever been conspicuous for his care of those under his command, and who seemed, to the last, to pay as much attention to their preservation, as to that of his own life.

" If any thing could have added to the shame " and indignation univerfally felt on this occasion, " it was to find, that his remains had been defert-" ed, and left exposed on the beach, although " they might have been brought off. It appears, " from the information of four or five midshipmen, " who arrived on the spot at the conclusion of the " fatal business, that the beach was then almost " entirely deferted by the Indians, who at length " had given way to the fire of the boats, and dif-" perfed through the town: fo that there feemed " no great obstacle to prevent the recovery of " Captain Cook's body; but the lieutenant return-" ed on board without making the attempt. It " is unnecessary to dwell longer on this painful " fubject, and to relate the complaints and cenfu-

" res that fell on the conduct of the lieutenant. C H A P?

" It will be fufficient to observe, that they were VII.

" fo loud as to oblige Captain Clerke publicly to 1779.

" notice them, and to take the depositions of his accusers down in writing. The Captain's bad

" state of health and approaching dissolution, it is supposed, induced him to destroy these pa-

" pers a short time before his death.

"It is a painful talk, to be obliged to notice circumstances, which seem to reflect upon the character of any man. A strict regard to truth, however, compelled me to the infertion of these facts, which I have offered merely as facts, without presuming to connect with them any comment of my own: esteeming it the part of a faithful historian, " to extenuate nothing, nor set down aught in malice."

"The fatal accident happened at eight o'clock in the morning, about an hour after Captain Cook landed. It did not feem, that the king, or his fons, were witnesses to it; but it is supposed that they withdrew in the midst of the tumult. The principal actors were the other Chiefs, many of them the king's relations and attendants: the man who stabbed him with the dagger was called Nooah. I happened to be the only one who recollected his person, from having on a former occasion mentioned his name in the journal I kept. I was induced to take particular notice of him, more from his personal appearance than any other consideration, though he was of high rank, and a

C H A P. VII.

" near relation of the king: he was fout and " tall, with a fierce look and demeanour, and " one who united in his figure the two qualities " of strength and agility, in a greater degree, " than ever I remembered to have feen before " in any other man. His age might be about " thirty, and by the white fcurf on his skin, " and his fore eyes, he appeared to be a hard " drinker of Kava. He was a constant compa-" nion of the king, with whom I first saw him, " when he paid a visit to Captain Clerke. The " Chief who first struck Captain Cook with the " club, was called Karimano, craha, but I did " not know him by his name. These circum-" stances I learnt of honest Kaireekea, the priest; " who added, that they were both held in great " esteem on account of that action: neither of "them came near us afterwards. When the boats " left the shore, the Indians carried away the " dead body of Captain Cook and those of the " marines, to the rifing ground, at the back of " the town, where we could plainly fee them " with our glasses from the ships.

"This most melancholy accident appears to have been altogether unexpected and unforefeen, as well on the part of the natives as
ourselves. I never saw sufficient reason to induce me to believe, that there was any thing
of design, or a pre-concerted plan on their
side, or that they purposely sought to quarrel
with us: thieving, which gave rise to the
whole, they were equally guilty of, in our

VII.

1779. .

" first and second visits. It was the cause of C HAP. " every mifunderstanding that happened between " us: their petty thefts were generally overlook-" ed, but sometimes slightly punished: the boat, " which they at last ventured to take away, " was an object of no small magnitude to people " in our fituation, who could not possibly re-" place her, and therefore not flightly to be " given up. We had no other chance of reco-"vering her, but by getting the person of the "king into our possession: on our attempting to " do that, the natives became alarmed for his " fafety, and naturally opposed those whom they " deemed his enemies. In the fudden conflict " that enfued, we had the unspeakable misfor-" tune of losing our excellent Commander, in " the manner already related. It is in this light " the affair has always appeared to me, as en-" tirely accidental, and not in the least owing " to any previous offence received, or jealoufy " of our fecond visit entertained by the natives. " Pareah feems to have been the principal in-" strument in bringing about this fatal disaster. "We learnt afterwards, that it was he who had " employed fome people to steal the boat: the " king did not feem to be privy to it, or even " apprized of what had happened, till Captain " Cook landed.

"It was generally remarked, that at first, the " Indians shewed great resolution in facing our " fire-arms; but it was entirely owing to igno-" rance of their effect. They thought that their

С н а р. VII.

" thick mats would defend them from a ball, " as well as from a stone; but being soon con-" vinced of their error, yet still at a loss to ac-" count how fuch execution was done among "them, they had recourse to a stratagem, " which, though it answered no other purpose, " ferved to shew their ingenuity and quickness " of invention, Observing the flashes of the " musquets, they naturally concluded, that " water would counteract their effect, and there-" fore, very fagaciously, dipped their mats, " or armour, in the fea, just as they came on " to face our people: but finding this last re-" fource to fail them, they foon dispersed, and " left the beach entirely clear. It was an object " they never neglected, even at the greatest ha-" zard, to carry off their flain; a custom, pro-" bably owing to the barbarity with which they " treat the dead body of an enemy, and the " trophies they make of his bones *."

I

T

t

n

0

to

fo ti

P.

fc

re

n

fe

7

In consequence of this barbarity of disposition, the whole remains of Captain Cook could not be recovered. For, though every exertion was made for that purpose; though negociations and threatenings were alternately employed, little more than the principal part of his bones (and that with great difficulty) could be procured. By the possession of them, our navigators were enabled to perform the last offices to their emi-

^{*} Samwell's Narrative of the Death of Captain James Cook, p. 2 - 20.

nent and unfortunate Commander. The bones, CHAP. having been put into a coffin, and the service being read over them, were committed to the deep, on the twenty-first, with the usual mili- 21 February. tary honours. What were the feelings of the companies of both the ships, on this occasion, must be left to the world to conceive; for those who were present know, that it is not in the power of any pen to express them.

A promotion of officers followed the decease of Captain Cook. Captain Clerke having fucceeded of course to the command of the expedition, removed on board the Resolution. By him Mr. Gore was appointed Captain of the Discovery, and the rest of the lieutenants obtained an addition of rank, in their proper order. Mr. Harvey, a midshipman, who had been in the last as well as the present voyage, was pro-

moted to the vacant lieutenancy *.

C-

1,

,

le at

e-

,

ď

Not long after Captain Cook's death, an event occurred in Europe, which had a particular relation to the voyage of our navigator, and which was fo honourable to himfelf, and to! the great nation from whom it proceeded, that it is no small pleasure to me to be able to lay the transaction fomewhat at large before my readers. What I refer to is, the letter which was issued, on the nineteenth of March 1779, by Monsieur Sartine, fecretary of the marine department at Paris, and

19 March.

1779.

King's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 59-64, 68, 76, 77. 80, 81,

32

fo

W

of

te

du

Fr

th

Pa

ce

qu

aci

66 1

C

« 1

" t

" [

"

« a

« 1

tran

Снар. VIJ. 1779.

fent to all the commanders of French ships. The rescript was as follows: "Captain Cook, who " failed from Plymouth in July 1776, on board " the Refolution, in company with the Discovery, " Captain Clerke, in order to make some dis-" coveries on the coasts, islands and seas of Ja-" pan and California; being on the point of re-" turning to Europe; and fuch discoveries being " of general utility to all nations, it is the King's " pleasure, that Captain Cook shall be treated " as a commander of a neutral and allied power, " and that all Captains of armed vessels, &c. " who may meet that famous navigator, shall " make him acquainted with the King's orders " on this behalf, but, at the same time, let him " know, that on his part he must refrain from " all hostilities *." By the Marquis of Condorcet we are informed, that this measure originated in the liberal and enlightened mind of that excellent citizen and statesman, Monsieur Turgot. " When war," fays the Marquis, " was declar-" ed between France and England, M. Turgot " faw how honourable it would be to the French " nation that the veffel of Captain Cook should " be treated with respect at sea. He composed " a memorial, in which he proved, that honour, " reason, and even interest, dictated this act of " respect for humanity, and it was in conse-" quence of this memorial, the author of which " was unknown during his life, that an order

^{*} Gentleman's Magazine, vol. xlix. p. 209.

" was given not to treat as an enemy, the com- C H A P. " mon benefactor of every European nation *."

VII. 1779.

Whilst great praise is due to Monsieur Turgot for having fuggested the adoption of a measure which hath contributed fo much to the reputation of the French government, it must not be forgotten, that the first thought of such a plan of conduct was probably owing to Dr. Benjamin Franklin. Thus much, at least, is certain, that this eminent philosopher, when ambassador at Paris from the United States of America, preceded the Court of France in iffuing a fimilar requisition; a copy of which cannot fail of being acceptable to the reader.

" To all Captains and Commanders of armed "Ships, acting by Commission from the Con-" gress of the United States of America, now in

" war with Great Britain.

" Gentlemen,

-

g

S

d

,

11

rs n

n

n-

11-

at t.

r-

ot ch

ld

ed

ır,

of

e-

ch er

" A ship having been fitted out from Eng-" land before the commencement of this war, " to make discoveries of new countries in un-" known feas, under the conduct of that most " celebrated navigator and discoverer, Captain " Cook; an undertaking truly laudable in itself, " as the increase of geographical knowledge faci-" litates the communication between distant na-

^{*} Condorcet's Life of M. Turgot, p. 263, English tranflation.

on

rec

ve

an

no

no

wl

ap

mi

lea

We

wi

po

ma

TH

and

car

an

pro

inj

to

An

late

pre

to

gei

wh

a r

M.

of

VII.

" tions, in the exchange of uleful products and " manufactures, and the extension of arts, where-" by the common enjoyments of human life " are multiplied and augmented, and science of " other kinds encreased, to the benefit of man-" kind in general - This is therefore most ear-" nestly to recommend to every one of you, " that in case the said ship, which is now ex-" pected to be foon in the European feas on " her return, should happen to fall into your " hands, you would not confider her as an " enemy, nor fuffer any plunder to be made of " the effects contained in her, nor obstruct her " immediate return to England, by detaining " her, or fending her into any other part of Eu-" rope, or to America; but that you would treat " the faid Captain Cook and his people with all " civility and kindness, affording them, as com-" mon friends to mankind, all the affistance in " your power, which they may happen to stand in " need of. In fo doing, you will not only " gratify the generofity of your own dispositions, " but there is no doubt of your obtaining the " approbation of the Congress, and your other " American owners. I have the honour to be, "Gentlemen,

"At Paffy, near Pa"ris, this 10th day
"of March 1779.

"Your most obedient, humble fervant,
"B. FRANKLIN,

"Minister Plenipotentiary from the Congress of the United States, at the Court of France."

nd

re-

life

of

an-

ar-

ou,

ex-

on

our

an

of

her

ng

iu-

eat

all

m-

in

in

aly

ns,

he

ner

,

nt,

oni

ed

of

VII. 1779.

It is observable, that as Dr. Franklin acted CHAP. on his own authority, he could only earnestly recommend to the Commanders of American armed veffels not to confider Captain Cook as an enemy; and it is fomewhat remarkable, that he mentions no more than one ship; Captain Clerke not being noticed in the requisition. In the confidence which the Doctor expressed, with respect to the approbation of Congress, he happened to be mistaken. As the members of that assembly, at least with regard to the greater part of them, were not possessed of minds equally enlightened with that of their ambaffador, he was not fupported by his masters in this noble act of humanity, of love to science, and of liberal policy. The orders he had given were instantly reversed; and it was directed by Congress, that especial care should be taken to seize Captain Cook, if an opportunity of doing it occurred. All this proceeded from a false notion that it would be injurious to the United States for the English to obtain a knowledge of the opposite coast of America.

The conduct of the court of Spain was regulated by fimilar principles of jealoufy. It was apprehended by that court, that there was reason to be cautious of granting, too eafily, an indulgence to Captain Cook; fince it was not certain what mischiefs might ensue to the Spaniards from a northern passage to their American dominions. . M. de Belluga, a Spanish gentleman and officer, of a liberal and philosophical turn of mind, and

C H A P. VII.

B

who was a member of the Royal Society of London, endeavoured to prevail upon the Count of Florida Blanca, and M. d'Almodavar, to grant an order of protection to the Resolution and Discovery; and he flattered himself, that the ministers of the King of Spain would be prevailed upon to prefer the cause of science to the partial views of interest: but the Spanish Government was not capable of srising to so enlarged and magnanimous a plan of policy. To the French nation alone, therefore, was reserved the honour of setting an example of wisdom and humanity, which, I trust, will not, hereafter, be so uncommon in the history of mankind *.

K

tl

tl

1

tl

to

B

th

la

P

A

be

ol ba

fe

af

CC

ye

ear

wa

lo

he

up

in

roi

The progress of the voyage, after the decease of Captain Cook, doth not fall within the design of the present narrative. It must be sufficient, therefore, barely to mention, that the Sandwich

* For the materials from which the preceding account is drawn up, I am indebted to Sir Joseph Banks. Sir Joseph and Mr. Stephens have been at considerable pains to obtain, by application to the Duke of Dorset, an authentic copy of the protection granted by the court of France to Captain Cook's ships. If it should arrive in time, it will be inserted at the end of the volume.

I shall here add, that as soon as Captain Gore was informed of the order of the French Government (an account of which he received at Canton) he thought himself bound, in return for the liberal exceptions made in favour of our navigators, to refrain from laying hold of any opportunities of capture that might chance to occur, and to preserve, throughout his voyage, the strictest neutrality. King's Voyage, p. 448.

Islands were farther explored, and a large addition of whatever relates to the knowledge of their productions and inhabitants obtained; that Kamtschatka was visited, and a very friendly intercourse maintained with the Russian officers, of that country; that our navigators experienced the most generous and hospitable treatment from Major Behm in particular, the Commander of the garrison at Bolcharetsk; that they proceeded to the north, in pursuit of the grand object of the expedition; that, having paffed through Beering's Straingt, and attained to fomething more than fixty-nine degrees and a half of northern latitude, they found lit absolutely impossible to penetrate through the ice, either on the fide of America or on the fide of Afia; that every hope being excluded of accomplishing this way a passage into the Atlantic ocean, Captain Clerke was obliged to come to the determination of failing back to the fouthward; that on the twentyfecond of August, (1779) being less than a month after this determination, the Captain died of a confumption *; that Captain Gore fucceeded to

f

1-

* Captain Clerke departed this life in the thirty-eighth year of his age. He was brought up to the navy from his earliest youth, and had been in several actions during the war which began in 1756. In the action between the Bellona and the Courageux, being stationed in the mizen-top, he was carried overboard with the mast; but was taken up without having received any hurt. He was a midshipman in the Dolphin, commanded by Captain Biron, in a voyage round the world; after which he served on the American station. In 1768, he made his second voyage round the

C H A P. VII. VII. King to that of the Discovery; that a second visit was paid to Kamtschatka, by which a farther acquaintance was gained with that part of the world; that no small accession of information was acquired with respect to geographical science in general; that our voyagers pursued their course by the coasts of Japan and China; that they made some stay at Canton; that thence they proceeded to the Cape of Good Hope; that they came to an anchor at Stromness, on the twenty-second of

world, in the Endeavour, as master's mate; and, in confequence of the death of Mr. Hicks, which happened on the twenty-third of May, 1771, he returned home a lieutenant. His third circum-navigation of the globe was in the Resolution, of which he was appointed the second lieutenant'; and he continued in that fituation till his return in 1775; foon after which he was promoted to the rank of mafter and commander. In what capacity he failed with Captain Cook in this last expedition, need not be added. The confumption of which Captain Clerke died, had evidently commenced before he left England, and he lingered under it during the whole voyage. Though his very gradual decay had long made him a melancholy object to his friends, nevertheless, they derived some consolation from the equanimity with which he bore his diforder, from the constant flow of good spirits maintained by him to his latest hour, and from his submitting to his fate with chearful refignation. It was, however, impossible, fays Mr. King, "not to feel a more than common degree of " compattion for a person, whose life had been a conti-" nued scene of those difficulties and hardships, to which " a feaman's occupation is fubject, and under which he " at last sunk." King's Voyage, p. 280, 281.

May,

N

of

da

th

the

tha wh

wi

ade die

cou

fcie

left

has

imr

the

May, 1780; that both ships arrived safe at the CHAP. Nore, on the fourth of October, after an absence of four years, two months, and twenty-two days; that, during the whole of the undertaking, the Resolution lost only five men by sickness, three of whom were in a precarious state of health at their departure from England, while the Discovery did not lose a single man; and that the history of the voyage, from the time in which Captain Cook's journal ends, was written with great ability by Mr. King. With concern I add, that, by the decease of Captain King, who died at Nice, in Italy, in the year 1784, this country fustained another loss of an able and scientific commander and navigator, who hath left a memorial of his talents and fervices, which has honourably united his name with that of the immortal Cook *.

VII. 1779. 1780. 22 May. 4 00.

^{*} A farther account of Captain King will be found in the Appendix, N L

CHAPTER THE EIGHTH.

Character of Captain Cook. — Effects of his Voyages. — Testimonies of Applause. — Commemorations of his Services. — Regard paid to his Family. — Conclusion.

Снар. VIII. FROM the relation that has been given of Captain Cook's course of life, and of the important events in which he was engaged, my readers cannot be strangers to his general character. This, therefore, might be left to be collected from his actions, which are the best exhibitions of the great qualities of his mind. But, perhaps, were I not to endeavour to assord a summary view of him in these respects, I might be thought to fail in that duty which I owe to the public on the present occasion.

It cannot, I think, be denied, that genius belonged to Captain Cook in an eminent degree. By genius I do not here understand imagination merely, or that power of culling the flowers of fancy which poetry delights in; but an inventive mind; a mind full of resources; and which, by its own native vigour, can suggest noble objects of pursuit, and the most effectual methods of attaining them. This faculty was possessed by our navigator in its sull energy, as is evident from

the he cul

wit ner cap eve in c by l

fere or t his

follo

ledg

with ficient rofe educe of the becare to ta ation

He a ficien positi manl

refpectorme forme the uncommon fagacity and penetration which CHAP. he discovered in a vast variety of critical and difficult situations.

To genius Captain Cook added application, without which nothing very valuable or permanent can be accomplished, even by the brightest capacity. For an unremitting attention to whatever related to his profession, he was distinguished in early life. In every affair that was undertaken by him, his affiduity was without interruption, and without abatement. Wherever he came, he suffered nothing which was sit for a seaman to know or to practise, to pass unnoticed, or to escape his diligence.

The genius and application of Captain Cook were followed by a large extent of knowledge; a knowledge which, besides a consummate acquaintance with navigation, comprehended a number of other sciences. In this respect, the ardour of his mind rose above the disadvantages of a very confined education. His progress in the different branches of the mathematics, and particularly in aftronomy, became fo eminent, that, at length, he was able to take the lead in making the necessary observations of this kind, in the courfe of his voyages. He attained, likewife, to fuch a degree of proficiency in general learning, and the art of composition, as to be able to express himself with a manly clearness and propriety, and to become respectable as the narrator, as well as the performer, of great actions.

Another thing, strikingly conspicuous in Cap-

f

CHAP.

tain Cook, was the perfeverance with which he pursued the noble objects to which his life was devoted. This, indeed, was a most distinguished feature in his character: in this he scarcely ever had an equal, and never a superior. Nothing could divert him from the points he aimed at; and he persisted in the prosecution of them, through difficulties and obstructions which would have deterred minds of very considerable strength and firmness.

What enabled him to perfevere in all his mighty undertakings, was the invincible fortitude of his spirit. Of this, instances without number occur in the accounts of his expeditions; two of which I shall take the liberty of recalling to the attention of my readers. The first is, the undaunted magnanimity with which he profecuted his difcoveries along the whole fouth-east coast of New Holland. Surrounded as he was with the greatest possible dangers, arising from the perpetual succession of rocks, shoals, and breakers, and having a ship that was almost shaken to pieces by repeated perils, his vigorous mind had a regard to nothing but what he thought was required of him by his duty to the public. It will not be easy to find, in the history of navigation, a parallel example of courageous exertion. other circumstance I would refer to is the boldnefs with which, in his fecond voyage, after he left the Cape of Good Hope, he pushed forwards into unknown feas, and penetrated through innumerable mountains and islands of

al be IV na

ic

W

ed an co on mo

ons per wh the

add imp

fure

tha

all hativ

is ap

*
to M
†

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK. 277

ice, in the fearch of a fouthern continent. It CHAP. was like launching into chaos: all was obscurity, VIII. all was darkness before him; and no event can be compared with it, excepting the failing of Magelhaens, from the straights which bear his name, into the Pacific Ocean *.

r.

e

of

h

le

y

15

nr

ch

n-

ed

if-

W

est

1C-

ng

at-

to

of

be

2

he

ldter red

ted.

of

The fortitude of Captain Cook, being founded upon reason, and not upon instinct, was not an impetuous valour, but accompanied with compleat self-possession. He was master of himself on every trying occasion, and seemed to be the more calm and collected, the greater was the exigence of the case. In the most perilous situations, when our Commander had given the proper directions concerning what was to be done while he went to rest, he could sleep, during the hours he had allotted to himself, with perfect composure and soundness to Nothing could be a surer indication of an elevated mind; of a mind that was entirely satisfied with itself, and with the measures it had taken.

To all these great qualities, Captain Cook added the most amiable virtues. That it was impossible for any one to excel him in humanity, is apparent from his treatment of his men through all his voyages, and from his behaviour to the natives of the countries which were discovered by him. The health, the convenience, and, as

^{*} For the two remarks above mentioned, I am indebted to Mr. Hodges.

[†] From the information of Captain Dudeston.

h

fi

P

0

u

bı

to

in

CC

Va

ch

is

an

th

co

fri

dra

fer.

be

ÇOI

"]

(]

" t

CC -

4 t

8

VIII. far as it could be admitted, the enjoyment of the feamen, were the constant objects of his attention; and he was anxiously solicitous to meliorate the condition of the inhabitants of the several islands and places which he visited. With regard to their thieveries, he candidly apologized for, and overlooked, many offences which others would have sharply punished; and when he was laid under an indispensable necessity of proceeding to any acts of severity, he never exerted them without feeling much reluctance and concern.

In the private relations of life, Captain Cook was entitled to high commendation. He was excellent as a husband and a father, and sincere and steady in his friendships: and to this it may be added, that he possessed that general sobriety and virtue of character, which will always be found to constitute the best security and ornament of every

other moral qualification.

With the greatest benevolence and humanity of disposition, Captain Cook was occasionally subject to a hastiness of temper. This, which has been exaggerated by the sew (and they are indeed sew) who are unfavourable to his memory, is acknowledged by his friends. It is mentioned both by Captain King and Mr. Samwell, in their delineations of his character. Mr. Hayley, in one of his poems, calls him the mild Cook; but, perhaps, that is not the happiest epithet which could have been applied to him. Mere mildness can scarcely be considered as the most prominent and distinctive feature in the mind of a man, whose powers of understanding

and of action were fo strong and elevated, who chad such immense difficulties to struggle with, and who must frequently have been called to the firmest exertions of authority and command.

VIII.

Lastly, Captain Cook was distinguished by a property which is almost universally the concomitant of truly great men, and that is, a simplicity of manners. In conversation he was unaffected and unassuming; rather backward in pushing discourse; but obliging and communicative in his answers to those who addressed him for the purposes of information. It was not possible that, in a mind constituted like his, such a paltry quality as vanity could find an existence.

e

0

f

f

n

)-

f

d

d

g

In this imperfect delineation of Captain Cook's character, I have spoken of him in a manner which is fully justified by the whole course of his life and actions, and which is perfectly agreeable to the fentiments of those who were the most nearly connected with him in the habits of intimacy and friendship. The pictures which some of them have drawn of him, though they have already been prefented to the public, cannot here with propriety be omitted. - Captain King has expressed himself concerning him in the following terms. " constitution of his body was robust, inured to " labour, and capable of under-going the feverest " hardships. His stomach bore, without difficulty, " the coarsest and most ungrateful food: - Great " was the indifference with which he submitted " to every kind of felf-denial. The qualities of

CHAP.

"his mind were of the fame hardy, vigorous kind with those of his body. His understanding was strong and perspicacious. His judgment, in whatever related to the services he was engaged in, quick and sure. His designs were bold and manly; and both in the conception, and in the mode of execution, bore evident marks of a great original genius. His courage was cool and determined, and accompanied with an admirable presence of mind in the moment of danger. His temper might perhaps have been justly blamed, as subject to hastiness and passion, had not these been disarmed by a disposition the most bene-

CC

66

66

ÇĞ

CC

46

ÇÇ

66

" Such were the outlines of Captain Cook's " character; but its most distinguishing feature " was that unremitting perseverance in the pur-" fuit of his object, which was not only superior " to the opposition of dangers, and the pressure " of hardships, but even exempt from the want of " ordinary relaxation. During the long and tedious " voyages in which he was engaged, his eager-" ness and activity were never in the least abated, " No incidental temptation could detain him for " a moment: even those intervals of recreation, " which fometimes unavoidably occurred, and " were looked for by us with a longing, that " persons, who have experienced the fatigues of " fervice, will readily excuse, were submitted to " by him with a certain impatience, whenever " they could not be employed in making a farther

" provision for the more effectual profecution of CHAP.

" his designs *".

VIII.

" The character of Captain Cook, fays Mr. " Samwell, will be best exemplified by the fer-" vices he has performed, which are univerfally " known, and have ranked his name above that " of any navigator of ancient or of modern times. " Nature had endowed him with a mind vigorous " and comprehensive, which in his riper years he " had cultivated with care and industry. His ge-" neral knowledge was extensive and various: in " that of his own profession he was unequalled. " With a clear judgment, strong masculine sense, " and the most determined resolution; with a " genius peculiarly turned for enterprize, he pur-" fued his object with unshaken perseverance:-" vigilant and active in an eminent degree:-cool " and intrepid among dangers; patient and firm " under difficulties and distress; fertile in expedi-" ents; great and original in all his defigns; active " and refolved in carrying them into execution. "These qualities rendered him the animating " fpirit of the expedition: in every fituation, he " stood unrivalled and alone; on him all eyes " were turned; he was our leading star, which " at its fetting, left us involved in darkness and " despair,

"His constitution was strong, his mode of living temperate.—He was a modest man, and rather bashful; of an agreeable lively conversa-

^{*} King's Voyage, p. 48, 49.

"

46

46

"

66

C

fe

d

th

C

VIII. "tion, fensible and intelligent. In his temper he WIII. "was somewhat hasty, but of a disposition the most friendly, benevolent, and humane. His person was above six feet high, and though a good-looking man, he was plain both in address and appearance. His head was small; his hair, which was a dark brown, he wore tied behind. His face was full of expression; his nose exceedingly well shaped; his eyes, which were fmall and of a brown cast, were quick and piercing; his eye-brows prominent, which gave his countenance altogether an air of austreity.

"He was beloved by his people, who looked up to him as to a father, and obeyed his commands with alacrity. The confidence we placed in him was unremitting; our admiration of his great talents unbounded; our esteem for his

" good qualities affectionate and fincere.-

"He was remarkably distinguished for the ac"tivity of his mind: it was that which enabled
"him to pay an unwearied attention to every ob"ject of the service. The strict economy he ob"ferved in the expenditure of the ship's stores,
"and the unremitting care he employed for the
"preservation of the health of his people, were
"the causes that enabled him to prosecute disco"veries in remote parts of the globe, for such a
"length of time as had been deemed impracticable
"by former navigators. The method he discover"ed for preserving the health of seamen in long
"voyages, will transmit his name to posterity as

" the friend and benefactor of mankind: the fuc- C H A P.
" cess which attended it, afforded this truly great VIII.

" man more fatisfaction, than the distinguished

" fame that attended his discoveries.

"England has been unanimous in her tribute of applause to his virtues, and all Europe has borne testimony to his merit. There is hardly a corner of the earth, however remote and savage, that will not long remember his benevo- lence and humanity. The grateful Indian, in time to come, pointing to the herds grazing his fertile plains, will relate to his children how the first stock of them was introduced into the country; and the name of Cook will be remembered a-

" mong those benign spirits, whom they worship

" as the fource of every good, and the fountain

" of every bleffing *."

At the conclusion of the Introduction to the Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, is an eulogium on Captain Cook, drawn up by one of his own profession, of whom it is said, that he is not more distinguished by the elevation of rank, than by the dignity of private virtues. Though this excellent eulogium must be known to many, and perhaps to most, of my readers, they will not be displeased at having the greater part of it brought to their recollection.

Captain James Cook "possessed," fays the

^{*} Some particulars concerning the life and character of Captain Cook, annexed to the narrative of his death, p. 25 — 27.

[†] Introduction, p. lxxxv.

8

CHAP. writer, "in an eminent degree, all the qualifica-VIII. "tions requisite for his profession and great under-

" takings; together with the amiable and worthy

" qualities of the best men.

"Cool and deliberate in judging: fagacious in determining: active in executing: steady and persevering in enterprizing from vigilance and unremitting caution: unsubdued by labour, difficulties, and disappointments: fertile in expedients: never wanting presence of mind: always possessing himself, and the full use of a

" found understanding.

"Mild, just, but exact in discipline: he was a father to his people, who were attached to him from affection, and obedient from confidence.

"His knowledge, his experience, his fagacity, "rendered him so entirely master of his subject, that the greatest obstacles were surmounted, and the most dangerous navigations became easy, and almost safe, under his direction.

"By his benevolent and unabating attention to the welfare of his ship's company, he discovered and introduced a system for the preservation of the health of seamen in long voyages,

"which has proved wonderfully efficacious.

"The death of this eminent and valuable man

was a loss to mankind in general; and particu
larly to be deplored by every nation that

respects useful accomplishments, that honours

fcience, and loves the benevolent and amiable

affections of the heart. It is still more to be

deplored by this country, which may justly

"boast of having produced a man hitherto une- CHAP. " qualled for nautical talents; and that forrow " is farther aggravated by the reflection, that his " country was deprived of this ornament by the " enmity of a people, from whom, indeed, it " might have been dreaded, but from whom it " was not deserved. For, actuated always by " the most attentive care and tender compassion a for the favages in general, this excellent man " was ever affiduoufly endeavouring, by kind " treatment, to diffipate their fears, and court " their friendship; overlooking their thefts and " treacheries, and frequently interpoling, at the " hazard of his life, to protect them from the " fudden refentment of his own injured people.-"Traveller! contemplate, admire, revere, " and emulate this great mafter in his profession; " whose skill and labours have enlarged natural " philosophy; have extended nautical science; " and have disclosed the long-concealed and " admirable arrangements of the Almighty in the " formation of this globe, and, at the same time, " the arrogance of mortals, in presuming to account, by their speculations, for the laws " by which he was pleased to create it. It is " now discovered, beyond all doubt, that the " fame great Being who created the universe by " his fiat, by the same ordained our earth to keep " a just poise, without a corresponding southern " continent, and it does fo. He stretches out the " north over the empty place, and hangeth the earth " upon nothing. Job xxvi. 7.

VIII.

CHAP.

0

(B)

"If the arduous but exact refearches of this extraordinary man have not discovered a new world, they have discovered seas unnavigated and unknown before. They have made us acquainted with islands, people, and productions of which we had no conception. And if he has not been so fortunate as Americus, to give his name to a continent, his pretensions to fuch a distinction remain unrivalled; and he will be revered while there remains a page of his own modest account of his voyages, and as long as mariners and geographers shall be instructed, by his new map of the southern hemisphere, to trace the various courses and discoveries he has made.

"If public fervices merit public acknowledgments; if the man who adorned and raifed the
fame of his country is deferving of honours,
then Captain Cook deferves to have a monument raifed to his memory, by a generous and
grateful nation.

" Virtutis uberrimum alimentum est honos.

"Val. Maximus, lib. ii. cap. 6 *."

O

0

0

m

n

m

n

as

b

to

W

The last character I shall here insert of Captain Cook, comes from a learned writer, who, in consequence of some disagreements which are understood to have subsisted between him and our great navigator, cannot be suspected of intending to celebrate him in the language of flattery.

^{*} Introduction to the Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, p. lxxxvi. — lxxxix.

Dr. Reinhold Forster, having given a short ac- CHAP. count of the Captain's death, adds as follows: "Thus fell this truly glorious and justly admired " navigator.- If we consider his extreme abilities, " both natural and acquired, the firmness and con-" stancy of his mind, his truly paternal care for " the crew entrusted to him, the amiable manner " with which he knew how to gain the friendship " of all the favage and uncultivated nations, and " even his conduct towards his friends and ac-" quaintance, we must acknowledge him to have " been one of the greatest men of his age, and " that reason justifies the tear which friendship " pays to his memory *." After fuch an encomium on Captain Cook, less regard may justly be paid to the deductions from it, which are added by Dr. Forster. What he hath faid concerning the Captain's temper, feems to have received a tincture of exaggeration, from prejudice and perfonal animosity; and the Doctor's infinuation, that our navigator obstructed Lieutenant Pickersgill's promotion, is, I have good reason to believe, wholly groundless. There is another error which must not pass unnoticed. Dr. Forster puts in his caveat against giving the name of Cook's Straights to the Straights between Asia and America, discovered by Beering. But if the Doctor had read the Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, published by authority, he would have feen, that there was no defign of rob-

VIII.

^{*} Forster's History of the Voyages and Discoveries made in the North, p. 404.

CHAP. bing Beering of the honour to which he was VIII. entitled.

From a survey of Captain Cook's character, it is natural to extend our reflections to the effects of the several expeditions in which he was engaged. These, indeed, must have largely appeared in the general History of his Life; and they have finely been displayed by Dr. Douglas (now Bishop of Carlisle) in his admirable Introduction to the Voyage to the Pacific Ocean. Under the conduct of so able a guide, I shall subjoin a short view of

the subject.

It must, however, be observed, that, with regard to the three principal consequences of our great navigator's transactions, I have nothing farther to offer. These are, his having dispelled the illusion of a Terra Australis Incognita; his demonstration of the impracticability of a northern passage from the Pacific to the Atlantic Ocean; and his having established a fure method of preserving the health of feamen in the longest voyages, and through every variety of latitude and climate. Concerning each of these capital objects, I have already fo fully spoken, that it is not in my power to add to the impression of their importance, and of Captain Cook's merits in relation to them, which I trust, is firmly fixed on the mind of every reader.

It is justly remarked, by the Bishop of Carlise that one great advantage accruing to the world from our late surveys of the globe, is, that they have consuted fanciful theories, too likely to give

birth

n

q

m

n

W

Ca

W

ei

by

fai

de

birth to impracticable undertakings. The ingenious reveries of speculative philosophers, which have fo long amused the learned, and raised the most fanguine expectations, are now obliged to fubmit, perhaps with reluctance, to the fober dictates of truth and experience. Nor will it be only by difcouraging future unprofitable fearches, that the late voyages will be of fervice to mankind, but also by lessening the dangers and distresses formerly experienced in those seas which are within the actual line of commerce and navigation. From the British discoveries, many commercial improvements may be expected to arise in our own times: but, in future ages, fuch improvements may be extended to a degree, of which, at prefent, we have no conception. In the long chain of causes and effects, no one can tell how widely and beneficially the mutual intercourse of the various inhabitants of the earth may hereafter be carried on, in confequence of the means of facilitating it, which have been explored and pointed out by Captain Cook.

t

r

C

1-

0

15

e

d

re

y

:,

of

le

ld

y

re.

The interests of science, as well as of commerce, stand highly indebted to this illustrious navigator. That a knowledge of the globe on which we live is a very desirable object, no one can call in question. This is an object which, while it is ardently pursued by the most enlightened philosophers, is sought for with avidity, even by those whose studies do not carry them beyond the lowest rudiments of learning. It need not be said what gratification Captain Cook hath provided for the world in this respect. Before the voya-

Vol. II.

C H A P. VIII.

CHAP.

ges of the present reign took place, nearly half the surface of the earth was hidden in obscurity and consusion. From the discoveries of our navigator, geography has assumed a new sace, and become, in a great measure, a new science; having attained to such a completion, as to leave only some less important parts of the globe to be

t

a

a

n

tl

ac

to

th

ca

ar

le

ef

pl

tra

af

er

cli

ha

de

explored by future voyagers *.

Happily for the advancement of knowledge, acquifitions cannot be obtained in any one branch, without leading to acquifitions in other branches, of equal, and perhaps of superior consequence. New oceans cannot be traverfed, or new countries visited, without presenting fresh objects of fpeculation and enquiry, and carrying the practice, as well as the theory, of philosophy, to a higher degree of perfection. Nautical astronomy, in particular, was in its infancy, when the late voyages were first undertaken; but, during the profecution of them, and especially in Captain Cook's last expedition, even many of the petty officers could observe the distance of the moon from the fun, or a star, the most delicate of all observations, with fufficient accuracy. As for the officers of superior rank, they would have felt themselves ashamed to have it thought that they did not know how to observe for, and compute the time at fea; though fuch a thing had, a little before, scarcely been heard of among seamen.

^{*} Lieutenant Robert's admirable chart will fet this matter in the strongest light.

Nay, first-rate philosophers had doubted the possi- CHAP. bility of doing it with the exactness that could be wished. It must, however, be remembered, that a large share of praise is due to the Board of Longitude, for the proficiency of the gentlemen of the navy in taking observations at sea. In consequence of the attention of that board to this important object, liberal rewards have been given to mathematicians for perfecting the lunar tables, and facilitating calculations; and artifts have been amply encouraged in the construction of instruments and watches, much more accurately and compleatly adapted to the purpoles of navigation than formerly existed.

It is needless to mention what a quantity of additional information has been gained with respect to the rife and times of the flowing of the tides; the direction and force of currents at fea; and the cause and nature of the polarity of the needle, and the theory of its variations. Natural knowledge has been increased by experiments on the effects of gravity in different and very distant places: and, from Captain Cook's having penetrated fo far into the Southern Ocean, it is now afcertained, that the phænomenon, usually called the Aurora Borealis, is not peculiar to high northern latitudes, but belongs equally to all cold climates, whether they be north or fouth.

Amidst the different branches of science that have been promoted by the late expeditions, there is none, perhaps, that stands so highly indebted to them as the science of botany. At least

VIII.

fi

f

a

fu

77

m

k

N

gi

q

th

th

iff

to

ne

pr

111

gl ha

th

im

th

we hil

CO

wl of

O

C H A P.

twelve hundred new plants have been added to the known system; and large accessions of intelligence have accrued with regard to every other part of natural history. This point has already been evinced by the writings of Dr. Sparrmann, of the two Forsters, Father and Son, and of Mr. Pennant; and this point will illustriously be manifested, when the great work of Sir Joseph Banks shall be accomplished, and given to the world.

It is not to the enlargement of natural knowledge only, that the effects arising from Captain Cook's voyages are to be confined. Another important object of study has been opened by them; and that is, the study of human nature, in situations various, interesting, and uncommon. The islands visited in the centre of the South Pacific Ocean, and the principal scenes of the operations of our discoverers, were untrodden ground. As the inhabitants, fo far as could be observed, had continued, from their original fettlement, unmixed with any different tribe; as they had been left entirely to their own powers for every art of life, and to their own remote traditions for every political or religious custom or institution; as they were uninformed by science, and unimproved by education, they could not but afford many fubjects of speculation to an inquisitive and philosophical mind. Hence may be collected a variety of important facts with respect to the state of man; with respect to his attainments and deficiencies, his virtues and vices, his employments and diversions, his feelings, manners, and customs,

in a certain period of fociety. Even the curio- CHAP. fities which have been brought from the discovered islands, and which enrich the British Museum, and the late Sir Ashton Lever's (now Mr. Parkinfon's) repository, may be considered as a valuable acquifition to this country; as supplying no small fund of information and entertainment.

Few enquiries are more interesting than those which relate to the migrations of the various families or tribes that have peopled the earth. It was known in general, that the Asiatic nation, called Malayans, possessed, in former times, much the greatest trade in the Indies; and that they frequented, with their merchant ships, not only all the coasts of Asia, but ventured over even, to the coasts of Africa, and particularly to the great island of Madagascar. But that, from Madagascar to the Marquesas and Easter Island, that is, nearly from the east side of Africa, till we approach towards the west side of America, a space including above half the circumference of the globe, the same nation of the Oriental world should have made their fettlements, and founded colonies throughout almost every intermediate stage of this immense tract, in islands at amazing distances from the mother continent, and the natives of which were ignorant of each other's existence; is an historical fact, that, before Captain Cook's voyages, could be but very imperfectly known. He it is who hath discovered a vast number of new spots of land, lurking in the bosom of the South Pacific Ocean, all the inhabitants of which display strikVIII.

CHAP, VIII,

ing evidences of their having derived their descent from one common Afiatic original. Nor is this apparent felely from a fimilarity of customs and institutions, but is established by a proof which conveys irrefiftible conviction to the mind, and that is, the affinity of language. The collections that have been made of the words which are used in the widely-diffused islands and countries that have lately been visited, cannot fail, in the hands of fuch men as a Bryant and a Marsden, to throw much light on the origin of nations, and the peopling of the globe. From Mr. Marfden, in particular, who has devoted his attention, time, and fludy to this curious fubject, the literary world may hereafter expect to be highly instructed and entertained.

There is another family of the earth, concerning which new information has been derived from the voyages of our British navigators. That the Efquimaux, who had hitherto only been found feated on the coasts of Labrador and Hudson's Bay, agreed with the Greenlanders in every circumstance of customs, manners, and language, which could demonstrate an original identity of nation, had already been afcertained. But that the same tribe now actually inhabit the islands and coasts on the west side of North America, oppolite Kamtschatka, was a discovery, the completion of which was referved for Captain Cook. In his narrative it will be feen that these people have extended their migrations to Norton Sound, Oonalashka, and Prince William's Sound; that is, to nearly the distance of CHAP. fifteen hundred leagues from their stations in VIII. Greenland, and the coast of Labrador. Nor does this curious fact rest merely on the evidence arising from similitude of manners: for it stands consirmed by a table of words, exhibiting such an affinity of language as will remove every doubt from the mind of the most scrupulous enquirer.

nt

115

d

h

d

15

d

at

ds

W

0-

r-

d

d

d

n-

d

at

n

d

n

d

al

1-

it

h

)-

lt

0

Other questions there are, of a very important nature, the folution of which will now be rendered more easy than hath heretofore been apprehended. From the full confirmation of the vicinity of the two continents of Asia and America, it can no longer be represented as ridiculous to believe, that the former furnished inhabitants to the latter. By the facts recently discovered, a credibility is added to the Mosaic account of the peopling of the earth *. That account will, I doubt not, stand the test of the most learned and rigorous investigation. Indeed, I have long been convinced, after the closest meditation of which I am capable, that found philosophy and genuine revelation never militate against each other. The rational friends of religion are so far from dreading the spirit of eiquiry that they wish for nothing more than a candid, calm, and impartial examination of the fubject, according to all the lights which the

^{*} Introduction to the Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, p. lvi — lxxv.

CHAP. improved reason and the enlarged science of VIII. man can afford.

One great effect of the voyages made under the conduct of Captain Cook, is their having excited a zeal for fimilar undertakings. Other princes and other nations are engaged in expeditions of navigation and discovery. By order of the French government, Mess. de la Peyrouse and de Langle sailed from Brest, in August, 1785, in the frigates Boussole and Astrolabe, on an enterprize, the express purpose of which was the improvement of geography, astronomy, natural history, and philosophy, and to collect accounts of customs and manners. For the more effectual profecution of the defign, feveral gentlemen were appointed to go out upon the voyage, who were known to excel in different departments of science and literature, M. Dagelet went as astronomer; M. de la Martiniere, P. Recevour, and M. de la Fresne, as naturalists; and the Chevalier de Lamanon, and M. Monges, Junior, as natural philosophers. The officers of the Boussole were men of the best information, and the firmest resolution; and the crew contained a number of artificers, in various kinds of mechanic employments. Marine watches, and other instruments, were provided; and M. Dagelet was particularly directed to make observations with M. Condamine's invariable pendulum, to determine the differences in gravity, and to ascertain the true proportion of the equatorial to the polar diameter of the earth. From

n

p.

CHAP.

VIII.

fome accounts which have already been received of these voyagers, it appears, that they have explored the coast of California; have adjusted the situation of more than sifty places, almost wholly unknown; and have visited Owhyhee, and the rest of the Sandwich islands *. When the expedition shall be completed, the whole result of it will doubtless be laid before the public.

Although Captain Cook has made fuch vast difcoveries in the Northern Ocean, on and between the east of Asia and the west coast of America. Mr. Coxe has well shewn that there is still room for a farther investigation of that part of the world. Accordingly, the object has been taken up by the Empress of Russia, who has committed the conduct of the enterprize to Captain Billings, an Englishman in her Majesty's service. As Captain Billings was with Captain Cook in his last voyage, he may reasonably be supposed to be properly qualified for the business he has undertaken. The defign, with the execution of which he is entrusted, appears to be very extensive and important; and, if it should be crowned with fuccess, cannot fail of making considerable additions to the knowledge of geography and navigation †.

There is one event at home, which has evidently refulted from Captain Cook's discoveries,

^{*} Critical Review, for April, 1788, p. 299 - 302.

[†] Coxe's Comparative View of the Russian Discoveries, p. 27 - 30.

CHAP. VIII.

and which, therefore, must not be omitted. What I refer to, is the fettlement at Botany Bay. With the general policy of this measure the present narrative has not any concern. The plan, I doubt not, has been adopted with the best intentions, after the maturest deliberation, and perhaps with confummate wisdom. One evident advantage arising from it is, that it will effectually prevent a number of unhappy wretches from returning to their former fcenes of temptation and guilt, and may open to them the means of industrious subsistence, and moral reformation. If it be wifely and prudently begun and conducted, who can tell what beneficial consequences may spring from it, in future ages? Immortal Rome is faid to have rifen from the refuse of mankind.

While we are confidering the advantages the discoverers have derived from the late navigations, a question naturally occurs, which is, What benefits have hence accrued to the discovered? It would be a fource of the highest pleasure to be able to answer this question to compleat satisfaction. But it must be acknowledged, that the fubject is not wholly free from doubts and difficulties; and these doubts and difficulties might be enlarged upon, and exaggerated, by an imagination which is rather disposed to contemplate and represent the dark than the luminous aspect of human affairs. In one respect, Mr. Samwell bas endeavoured to shew, that the natives of the lately-explored parts of the world, and especially so far as relates to the Sandwich

Islands, were not injured by our people; and it CHAP. was the constant solicitude and care of Captain Cook, that evil might not be communicated in any one place to which he came. If he was univerfally fuccessful, the good which, in various cases, he was instrumental in producing, will be reflected upon with the more peculiar fatisfaction.

There is an essential difference between the voyages that have lately been undertaken, and many which have been carried on in former times. None of my readers can be ignorant of the horrid cruelties that were exercifed by the conquerors of Mexico and Peru; cruelties which can never be remembered, without blushing for religion and human nature. But to undertake expeditions with a defign of civilizing the world, and meliorating its condition, is a noble object. recesses of the globe were investigated by Captain Cook, not to enlarge private dominion, but to promote general knowledge; the new tribes of the earth were visited as friends; and an acquaintance with their existence was fought for, in order to bring them within the pale of the offices of humanity, and to relieve the wants of their imperfect state of fociety. Such were the benevolent views which our navigator was commissioned by his Majesty to carry into execution; and there is reason to hope that they will not be wholly unfuccessful. From the longcontinued intercourse with the natives of the Friendly, Society, and Sandwich Islands, fome

VIII. minds. The uncommon objects which have been presented to their observation, and excited their surprize, will naturally tend to enlarge their stock of ideas, and to surnish new materials for the exercise of their reasonable faculties. It is no small addition to their comforts of life, and their immediate enjoyments, that will be derived from the introduction of our useful animals and vegetables; and if the only benefit they should ever receive from the visits of the English, should be the having obtained fresh means of subsistence, that must be considered as a great acquisition *.

But may not our hopes be extended to still nobler objects? The connexion which has been opened with these remote inhabitants of the world, is the first step toward their improvement; and consequences may flow from it, which are far beyond our present conceptions. Perhaps, our late voyages may be the means appointed by Providence, of spreading, in due time, the bleffings of civilization among the numerous tribes of the South Pacific Ocean, and preparing them for holding an honourable rank among the nations of the earth. There cannot be a more laudable attempt, than that of endeavouring to refcue millions of our fellow-creatures from that state of humiliation in which they now exist t. Nothing can more effentially con-

^{*} Introduction, ubi fupra, p. lxxv, lxxvi.

⁺ Ibid. p. lxxvii.

tribute to the attainment of this great end, than CHAP. a wife and rational introduction of the Christian vIII. religion; an introduction of it in its genuine simplicity; as holding out the worship of one God, inculcating the purest morality, and promising eternal life as the reward of obedience. These are views of things which are adapted to general comprehension, and calculated to produce the noblest effects.

Confidering the eminent abilities displayed by Captain Cook, and the mighty actions performed by him, it is not furprizing that his memory should be held in the highest estimation, both at home and abroad. Perhaps, indeed, greater honour is paid to his name abroad than at home. Foreigners, I am informed, look up to him with an admiration which is not equalled in this country. A remarkable proof of it occurs, in the eulogy of our navigator, by Michael Angelo Gianetti, which was read at the Royal Florentine Academy, on the ninth of June, 1785, and published at Florence, in the same year *. Not having seen it, I am deprived of the power of doing justice to its merit. If I am not mistaken in my recollection, one of the French literary academies has proposed a prize for the best elogium on Captain Cook; and there can be no doubt but that feveral candidates will appear upon the occasion, and exert the whole force of their eloquence on so interesting a subject.

^{*} Monthly Review, vol. lxxiii. p. 458.

VIII. To the applauses of our Navigator, which bave already been inserted, I cannot avoid adding some poetical testimonies concerning him. The first I shall produce is from a foreign poet, M. l'Abbé de Liste. This gentleman has concluded his poem, "Les Jardins" with an encomium on Captain Cook, of which the following lines are a translation.

"Give, give me flowers: with garlands of renown

"Those glorious exiles brows my hands shall crown,

"Who nobly fought on distant coasts to find,

" Or thither bore those arts that bless mankind:

"Thee chief, brave Cook, o'er whom, to nature dear,

" With Britain Gallia drops the pitying tear.

"To foreign climes and rude, where nought before

"Announc'd our veffels but their cannon's roar,

" Far other gifts thy better mind decreed,

" The sheep, the heifer, and the stately steed;

" The plough, and all thy country's arts; the crimes

" Attoning thus of earlier favage times.

"With peace each land thy bark was wont to hail,

" And tears and bleffings fill'd thy parting fail

" Receive a stranger's praise, nor, Britain, thou

" Forbid these wreaths to grace thy Hero's brow,

" Nor fcorn the tribute of a foreign fong,

" For Virtue's fons to every land belong:

" And shall the Gallic Muse disdain to pay

"The meed of worth, when Lewis leads the way?

"But what avail'd, that twice thou dar'dst to try

CHAP.

VIII.

- "The frost-bound sea, and twice the burning sky,
- "That by winds, waves, and every realm rever'd,
- " Safe, only fafe, thy facred veffel fteer'd;
- "That war for thee forgot its dire commands?
- " The world's great friend, ah! bleeds by favage hands *."

There have not been wanting elegant writers of our own country, who have embraced with pleafure the opportunities that have offered of paying a tribute of praise to Captain Cook. The ingenious and amiable Miss Hannah More has lately seized an occasion of celebrating the humane intentions of the Captain's discoveries.

- " Had those advent'rous spirits who explore
- "Thro' ocean's trackless wastes, the far-fought shore,
- "Whether of wealth infatiate, or of power,
- " Conquerors who waste, or ruffians who devour:
- " Had these posses'd, o Cook! thy gentle mind,
- " Thy love of arts, thy love of human-kind;
- " Had thefe pursu'd thy mild and lib'ral plan,
- "DISCOVERERS had not been a curse to man!
- "Then, blefs'd Philanthropy! thy focial hands
- " Had link'd dissever'd worlds in brothers bands;
- " Careless, if colour, or if clime divide;
- "Then lov'd, and loving, man had liv'd, and died +."
- * Gentleman's Magazine, Vol. liii. p. 1044, 1045. The above translation was made by Mr. William Jackson of Canterbury. In the same Magazine, p. 1034, 1035, is the original French.
 - † SLAVERY, a Poem.

takings.

VIII. Soon after the account arrived in England of VIII. Captain Cook's decease, two poems were published in celebration of his memory; one of which was an Ode, by a Mr. Fitzgerald, of Gray's-Inn. But the first, both in order of time and of merit, was an Elegy, by Miss Seward, whose poetical talents have been displayed in many beautiful instances to the public. This lady, in the beginning of her Poem, has admirably represented the principle of humanity by which the Captain was actuated in his under-

"Ye, who ere while for Cook's illustrious brow

" Pluck'd the green laurel, and the oaken bough,

" Hung the gay garlands on the trophied oars,

44 And pour'd his fame along a thousand shores,

" Strike the flow death-bell! - weave the facred verse,

"And firew the cypress o'er his honor'd hearse;

" In fad procession wander round the shrine,

" And weep him mortal, whom ye fung divine!

^{ct} Say first, what Pow'r inspir'd his dauntless breast

"With fcorn of danger, and inglorious rest,

" To quit imperial London's gorgeous plains,

"Where, rob'd in thousand tints, bright pleasure reigns?-

What Pow'r inspir'd his dauntless breast to brave

" The fcorch'd Equator, and th' Antarctic wave?

"Climes, where fierce funs in cloudless ardors shine,

"And pour the dazzling deluge round the Line;

"The realms of frost, where icy mountains rise,

"Mid the pale funimer of the polar skies? -

IT

"

C

bita

anin

66

" IT WAS HUMANITY! - on coasts unknown,

CHAP.

" The fhiv'ring natives of the frozen zone,

" And the fwart Indian, as he faintly strays

" Where Cancer reddens in the folar blaze,'

" She bade him feek; - on each inclement shore

" Plant the rich feeds of her exhauftless ftore;

"Unite the favage hearts, and hostile hands,

" In the firm compact of her gentle bands;

"Strew her foft comforts o'er the barren plain,"

"Sing her fweet lays, and confecrate her fane.
"IT WAS HUMANITY! — O Nymph divine!

" I fee thy light step print the burning Line!

"There thy bright eye the dubious pilot guides,

" The faint oar struggling with the scalding tides. -

"On as thou lead'ft the bold, the glorious prow,

" Mild, and more mild, the floping fun-beams glow;

" Now weak and pale the leffen'd luftres play,

" As round th' horizon rolls the timid day;

" Barb'd with the fleeted fnow, the driving hail,

" Rush the fierce arrows of the polar gale;

" And thro' the dim, unvaried, ling'ring hours,

"Wide o'er the waves incumbent horror low'rs."

Captain Cook's endeavours to ferve the inhabitants of New Zealand, by the vegetables and animals he left among them, are thus described.

" To these the Hero leads his living store,

" And pours new wonders on th' uncultur'd shore;

"The filky fleece, fair fruit, and golden grain;

"And future herds and harvests bless the plain.
Vol. II.

306

CHAP.

₿

- " O'er the green foil his Kids exulting play,
- " And founds his clarion loud the bird of day;
- "The downy Goose her ruffled bosom laves,
- "Trims her white wing, and wantons in the waves;
- " Stern moves the Bull along th' affrighted shores,
- " And countless nations tremble as he roars."

I shall only add the pathetic and animated conclusion of this fine Poem.

- " But ah! aloft on Albion's rocky steep;
- "That frowns incumbent o'er the boiling deep,
- " Solicitous, and fad, a fofter form
- " Eyes the lone flood, and deprecates the ftorm. -
- " Ill-fated matron! for, alas! in vain
- "Thy eager glances wander o'er the main!-
- " 'Tis the vex'd billows, that infurgent rave,
- "Their white foam filvers yonder distant wave,
- " 'Tis not his fails! thy husband comes no more!
- " His bones now whiten an accurfed fhore!-
- " Retire, for heark! the fea-gull shricking foars,
- "The lurid atmosphere portentous low'rs;
- " Night's fullen spirit groans in ev'ry gale,
- "And o'er the waters draws the darkling veil,
- " Sighs in thy hair, and chills thy throbbing breaft-
- "Go, wretched mourner! weep thy griefs to rest!
 - "Yet, tho' through life is loft each fond delight,
- " Tho' fet thy earthly fun in dreary night,
- " Oh! raise thy thoughts to yonder starry plain,
- " And own thy forrow felfish, weak, and vain:

fee far the in Iffication and I

pa

Pe

me

pol

mo

try

of

wh

in

" Since, while Britannia, to his virtues just,

C H A P.

" Twines the bright wreath, and rears th'immortal buft;

"While on each wind of heav'n his fame shall rife,

" In endless incense to the smiling skies;

"THE ATTENDANT POWER, that bade his fails expand,

" And waft her bleffings to each barren land,

" Now raptur'd bears him to th' immortal plains,

"Where Mercy hails him with congenial strains;

"Where foars, on Joy's white plume, his spirit free,

" And angels choir him, while he waits for THEE.

Captain Cook's discoveries, among other effects, have opened new scenes for a poetical fancy to range in, and presented new images to the felection of genius and taste. The Morais, in particular, of the inhabitants of the South Sea Islands, afford a fine subject for the exercise of a plaintive muse. Such a muse hath seized upon the subject; and, at the same time, has added another wreath to the memory of our navigator. I refer to a lady, who hath already, in many passages of her "Peru," in her "Ode on the Peace," and above all, in her "Irregular Fragment," amply proved to the world, that she possesses not only the talent of elegant and harmonious versification, but the spirit of true poetry. The poem, which I have now the pleasure of giving for the first time to the public, and which was written at my request, will be found in the Appendix *. It is somewhat remarkable,

^{*} Vide Appendix, No II.

CHAP. VIII.

8

that female poets have hitherto been the chief celebrators of Captain Cook in this country. Perhaps a fubject which would furnish materials for as rich a production as Camoen's Lusiad, and which would adorn the pen of a Hayley or a Cowper, may hereafter call forth the genius of

b

h

W

ex

te

ur

th

ma

en

fhe

M

far

it,

larg

one

a re

(w)

178

mai

an a

to b

Earl

A

some poet of the stronger fex.

The Royal Society of London could not lose fuch a member of their body as Captain Cook, without being anxious to honour his name and memory by a particular mark of respect. Accordingly, it was refolved to do this by a medal; and a voluntary subscription was opened for the purpose. To fuch of the fellows of the Society as fubscribed twenty guineas, a gold medal was appropriated: filver medals were affigned to those who contributed a smaller sum; and to each of the other members one in bronze was given. The fabfcribers of twenty guineas were Sir Joseph Banks, President; the Prince of Anspach, the Duke of Montagu, Lord Mulgrave, and Messieurs Cavendish, Peachey, Perrin, Poli, and Shuttle-Many designs, as might be expected, were proposed upon the occasion. The medal which was actually struck, contains, on one fide, the head of Captain Cook in profile, and round it, JAC. COOK OCEANI INVESTIGATOR ACERRI-MUS; and on the exergue, REG. SOC. LOND. SOcio suo. On the reverse is a representation of Britannia, holding a globe. Round her is inscribed, NIL INTENTATUM NOSTRI LIQUERE; and on the exergue, AUSPICIIS GEORGII III.

S

f

e

d I-

a e.

d l:

i-

er b-

S,

of

a-

e-

al

le,

nd

0-

of

ri-

nd

Of the gold medals which were struck on this occasion, one was presented to his Majesty, another to the Queen, and a third to the Prince of Wales. Two were fent abroad: the first to the French King, on account of the protection he had granted to the ships under the command of Captain Cook; and a fecond to the Empress of Russia, in whose dominions the same ships had been received and treated with every degree of friendship and kindness. Both these presents were highly acceptable to the great personages to whom they were transmitted. The French King expressed his fatisfaction in a very handsome letter to the Royal Society, figned by himself, and underfigned by the Marquis de Vergennes; and the Empress of Russia commissioned Count Ofterman to fignify to Mr. Fitzherbert the fense she entertained of the value of and the present, that fhe had caused it to be forthwith deposited in the Museum of the Imperial Academy of Sciences. As a farther testimony of the pleasure she derived from it, the Empress presented to the Royal Society a large and beautiful gold medal, containing on one fide the effigies of herfelf, and on the reverse a representation of the statue of Peter the Great.

After the general affigument of the medals, (which took place in the spring of the year 1784) there being a surplus of money still remaining, the President and Council resolved that an additional number should be struck off in gold, to be disposed of as presents to Mrs. Cook, the Earl of Sandwich, Dr. Benjamin Franklin, Dr.

C H'A P. VIII. VIII. Cooke, Provost of King's College, Cambridge, and Mr. Planta. About the same time, it was agreed, that Mr. Aubert should be allowed to have a gold medal of Captain Cook, on his paying for the gold and the expense of striking it; in consideration of his intention to present it

to the King of Poland *.

During the two vifits of the Refolution and Discovery at Kamtschatka, it was from Colonel Behm, the Commandant of that province, that the ships, and the officers and men belonging to them, had received every kind of affiftance which it was in his power to bestow. His liberal and hospitable behaviour to the English navigators, is related at large in Captain King's Voyage. Such was the fense entertained of it by the Lords of the Admiralty, that they determined to make a present to the Colonel of a magnificent piece of plate, with an inscription expressive of his humane and generous disposition and conduct. The elegant pen of Dr. Cooke was employed in drawing up the inscription, which, after it had been subjected to the opinion and correction of some gentlemen of the first eminence in classical tafte, was as follows:

"VIRO EGREGIO MAGNO DE BEHM; qui Imperatricis Augustissi næ Catharinæ auspiciis, fummâque animi benignitate, sæva, quibus præerat, Kamtschatkæ littora, navibus nautisque Britannicis, hospita præbuit: eosque, in terr

d

h

^{*} From the books of the Royal Society, and papers in the possession of Sir Joseph Banks.

" minis, si qui essent Imperio Russico, frustrà, " explorandis, mala multa perpessos, iteratâ vice VIII. " excepit, refecit, recreavit, et commeatù omni

" cumulate auctos dimisit; REI NAVALIS BRI-" TANNICÆ SEPTEMVIRI in aliquam benevolentiæ

" tam infignis memoriam, amicissimo, gratissimo-

" que animo, suo, patriæque nomine, D.D.D. M.CC.LXXXI *."

Sir Hugh Pallifer, who, through life, manifested an invariable regard and friendship for Captain Cook, has displayed a figual instance, since the Captain's decease, of the affection and esteem in which he holds his memory. At his estate in Buckinghamshire, Sir Hugh hath constructed a fmall building, on which he has erected a pillar, containing the fine character of our great Navigator that is given at the end of the Introduction to the last Voyage, and the principal part of which has been inferted in the present work. This character was drawn up by a most respectable gentleman, who has long been at the head of the naval profession; the honourable Admiral Forbes, Admiral of the Fleet, and General of Marines; to whom Captain Cook was only known by his eminent merit and his extraordinary actions +.

f

f

S t.

d

of

al

1-

,

15 f-

r-

10

Amidst the numerous testimonies of regard that have been paid to Captain Cook's merits and

^{*} From papers in the possession of Sir Joseph Banks.

[†] From the information of Sir Hugh Pallifer.

VIII. his family hath not been forgotten. Soon after the intelligence arrived of his unfortunate decease, this matter was taken up by the Lords of the Admiralty, with a zeal and an effect, which the following authentic document will fully display.

"At the Court at St. James's, the "(L. S.) "2d of February 1780;

" Present,

" The KING's Most Excellent Majesty in Council.

"Whereas there was this day read, at the Board, "a memorial from the Right Honourable the "Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, dated the 27th of last month, in the words following; viz.

"Having received an authentic account of the death of that great Navigator, Captain Ja"mes Cook, who has had the honour of being employed by Your Majesty in three different voyages, for the discovery of unknown countries, in the most distant parts of the globe; we think it our duty humbly to represent to Your Majesty, that this meritorious officer, after having received from Your Majesty's gracious benevolence, as a reward for his pub"lic services in two successful circumnaviga-

VIII.

"tions, a comfortable and honourable retreat, CHAP. " where he might have lived many years to be-" nefit his family, he voluntarily relinquished " that eafe and emolument to undertake another " of these voyages of discovery, in which the " life of a Commander, who does his duty, must " always be particularly exposed, and in which, " in the execution of that duty, he fell, leaving " his family, whom his public spirit had led him " to abandon, as a legacy to his country. We " do therefore humbly propose, that Your Ma-" jesty will be graciously pleased to order a pen-" fion of two hundred pounds a year to be fet-" tled on the widow, and twenty-five pounds " a year upon each of the three fons of the faid " Captain James Cook, and that the same be " placed on the ordinary estimate of the navy, " His Majesty, taking the faid memorial into " His Royal consideration, was pleased, with the " advice of His privy council, to order, as it is " hereby ordered, that a pension of two hundred " pounds a year be fettled on the widow, and " twenty - five pounds a year upon each of the " three fons of the faid Captain James Cook, and " that the same be placed on the ordinary estimate " of His Majesty's navy; and the Lords Com-" missioners of the Admiralty are to give the ne-" ceffary directions herein accordingly.

" W. FAWKENER.

The preceding memorial to the King was figned

CHAP. by the Earl of Sandwich Mr. Buller, the Earl of VIII. Lisburne, Mr. Penton, Lord Mulgrave, and Mr. Mann; and the several officers of the Board of Admiralty seconded the ardour of their superiors, by the speed and generosity with which his Majesty's royal grant to Captain Cook's widow and children passed through the usual forms *.

Another occasion was afterwards seized of conferring a substantial benefit on the Captain's family. The charts and plates, belonging to the Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, were provided at the expence of Government; the consequence of which was, that a large profit accrued from the sale of the publication. Of this profit, half was consigned, in trust, to Sir Hugh Palliser and Mr. Stephens, to be applied to the use of Mrs. Cook, during her natural life, and afterwards to be divided between her children †.

Honour, as well as emolument, hath graciously been conferred by his Majesty upon the descendants of Captain Cook. On the third of September 1785, a coat of arms was granted to the family, of which a description will be given below **.

^{*} From the information of Sir Joseph Banks.

[†] A fourth was allotted to Captain King, and the remaining fourth to Mr. Blyth, and to the representatives of Captain Clerke. Mr. Anderson's representatives had previously been gratified.

^{**} Azure, between the two polar stars Or, a sphere on the plane of the meridian, north-pole elevated, circles of latitude for every ten degrees, and of longitude for every fifteen, shewing the Pacific Ocean between fixty and two

VIII.

Our Navigator had fix children; James, Na- CHAP. thaniel, Elizabeth, Joseph, George, and Hugh. Of these, Joseph and George died soon after their birth, and Elizabeth in the fifth year of her age. James, the eldest fon, who was born at St. Paul's, Shadwell, on the thirteenth of October 1763, is now a lieutenant in his Majesty's navy. In a letter, written by Admiral Sir Richard Hughes, in 1785, from Granada, to Mrs. Cook, he is spoken of in terms of high approbation. Nathaniel, who was born on the fourteenth of December 1764, at Mile-end Old Town, was brought up, likewife, in the naval fervice, and was unfortunately lost on board his Majesty's ship Thunderer, Commodore Walfingham, in the hurricane which happened at Jamaica on the third of October 1780. He is faid to have been a most promising youth. Hugh, the youngest, was born on the twentyfecond of May 1776; and was fo called after the name of his father's great friend, Sir Hugh Palliser *.

It hath often been mentioned, in terms of no fmall regret, that a monument hath not yet been

hundred and forty west, bounded on one side by America. on the other by Asia and New Holland, in memory of the discoveries made by him in that ocean, so very far beyond all former navigators. His track thereon is marked with red lines. And for crest, on a wreath of the colours, is an arm imbowed, vested in the uniform of a captain of the royal navy. In the hand is the union jack, on a staff Proper. The arm is encircled by a wreath of palm and laurel.

^{*} From the information of Mrs. Cook.

CHAP, erected to the memory of Captain Cook, in Westminster Abbey. The wish and the hope of VIII. fuch a monument are hinted at in the close of the Bishop of Carlisle's Introduction, so often referred to; and the same sentiment is expressed by the author of the Eulogium, at the end of that Introduction. Sir Hugh Pallifer has also spoken to the like purpose, in a communication I received from him. It would certainly redound to the honour of the nation, to order a magnificent memorial of the abilities and fervices of our illustrious Navigator; on which account, a tribute of that kind may be regarded as a defirable thing. But a monument in Westminster Abbey would be of little consequence to the reputation of Captain Cook. His fame stands upon a wider base, and will furvive the comparatively perishing materials of brass, or stone, or marble. The name of Cook will be held in honour, and recited with applause, so long as the records of human events shall continue in the earth: nor is it posfible to fay, what may be the influence and rewards, which, in other worlds, shall be found to attend upon eminent examples of wisdom and of virtue.



APPENDIX Nº 1.

In page 273, it is mentioned, that a farther account of Captain King would be given in the Appendix. This was faid in a reliance upon my receiving answers to several questions with which I had waited upon the Reverend Mr. King, Preacher to the Honourable Society of Gray's Inn. As this Gentleman has not favoured me with the communication I expected (perhaps from some unavoidable hindrances), I am precluded from paying that additional tribute to the memory of his brother which I wished to have done.

APPENDIX, N° 2.

THE MORAI, AN ODE.

By Miss HELEN MARIA WILLIAMS.

FAIR Otaheite, fondly bleft By him, who long was doom'd to brave The fury of the polar wave, That fiercely mounts the frozen rock Where the harsh sea-bird rears her nest, And learns the raging furge to mock -There, Night, that loves eternal storm, Deep, and lengthen'd darkness throws, And untried Danger's doubtful form Its half-feen horror shows! While Nature, with a look fo wild, Leans on the cliffs in chaos pil'd; That here, the aw'd, astonish'd mind, Forgets, in that o'erwhelming hour When her rude hands the storms unbind In all the madness of her power, That she who spreads the favage gloom, That she' can dress in melting grace,



In sportive Summer's lavish bloom, The aweful terrors of her face; And wear the sweet perennial smile That charms in Otaheite's isle.

Yet, amid her fragrant bowers,
Where spring, whose dewy singers strew
O'er other lands some sleeting slowers,
Lives, in blossoms ever new;
Whence arose that shriek of pain?
Whence the tear that slows in vain?—
Death! thy unrelenting hand
Tears some transient, human band—
Eternity! rich plant, that blows
Beneath a brighter, happier sky,
Time is a fading branch, that grows
On thy pure stem, and blooms to die.

What art thou, Death? — terrific shade,
In unpierc'd gloom array'd! —
Oft will daring Fancy stray
Far in the central wastes, where Night
Divides no chearing hour with Day,
And unnam'd horrors meet her sight;
There thy form she dimly sees,
And round the shape unfinish'd throws
All her frantic vision shews
When numbing fears her spirit freeze—

But can mortal voice declare

If Fancy paints thee as thou art?

Thy afpect may a terror wear

Her pencil never shall impart;

The eye that once on thee shall gaze

No more its stiffen'd orb can raise;

The lips that could thy power reveal

Shall lasting silence instant seal—

In vain the icy hand we fold,

In vain the breast with tears we steep,

The heart that shar'd each pang, is cold,

The vacant eye no more can weep.

Yet from the shore where Ganges rolls
His wave beneath the torrid ray,
To earth's chill verge, where o'er the poles
Fall the last beams of ling'ring day,
For ever facred are the dead!
Sweet Fancy comes in Sorrow's aid,
And bids the mourner lightly tread
Where th' insensate clay is laid;
Bids partial gloom the sod invest
By the mould'ring relics prest;
Then lavish strews, with sad delight,
Whate'er her consecrating power
Reveres, of herb, or fruit, or flower,
And fondly weaves the various rite.

See! o'er Otaheite's plain Moves the long, funereal train; Slow the pallid corfe they bear, Oft they breathe the folemn prayer: Where the ocean bathes the land Thrice, and thrice, with pious hand. The priest when high the billow springs, From the wave unfullied, flings Waters pure, that sprinkled near Sanctify the hallow'd bier: But never may one drop profane The relics with forbidden stain! Now around the fun'ral shrine Led in mystic mazes, twine Garlands, where the plantain weaves With the palm's luxuriant leaves; And o'er each facred knot is spread The plant devoted to the dead.

Five pale moons with trembling light
Shall gaze upon the lengthen'd rite;
Shall fee distracted Beauty tear
The tresses of her flowing hair;
Those shining locks, no longer dear,
She wildly scatters o'er the bier;
And careless gives the frequent wound
That bathes in precious blood the ground

When along the western sky
Day's reslected colours die,
And Twilight rules the doubtful hour
Ere slow-pac'd Night resumes her power;
Mark the cloud that lingers still
Darkly, on the hanging hill!
There the disembodied Mind
Hears, upon the hollow wind,
In unequal cadence thrown,
Sorrow's oft-repeated moan:
Still some human passions sway
The spirit late immers'd in clay;
Still the saithful sigh is dear,
Still belov'd the fruitless tear!

Five waining moons, with wand'ring light,
Have past the shadowy bound of night,
And mingled their departing ray
With the soft fires of early day;
Let the last, sad rite be paid
Grateful to the conscious Shade:
Let the priest, with pious care,
Now the wasted relics bear
Where the Morai's aweful gloom
Shrouds the venerable tomb;
Let the plantain lift its head,
Cherish'd emblem of the dead;

Slow and folemn, o'er the grave, Let the twifted plumage wave, Symbol hallow'd, and divine, Of the God who guards the shrine. -Hark! - that shriek of strange despair Never shall disturb the air, Never, never shall it rife But for Nature's broken ties!-Bright crescent! that with lucid smile Gild'st the Morai's lofty pile, Whose broad lines of shadow throw A gloomy horror far below; Witness, O recording moon! All the rites are duly done; Be the faithful tribute o'er, The hov'ring Spirit asks no more! Mortals, cease the pile to tread, Leave to filence, leave the dead.

But where may she who loves to stray
Mid shadows of funereal gloom,
And courts the sadness of the tomb,
Where may she seek that proud Morai
Whose dear memorial points the place
Where fell the Friend of human race?—
Ye lonely Isles! On ocean's bound
Ye bloom'd, thro' time's long slight unknown,

Till he along the surges cast
Philanthropy's connecting zone,
And spread her loveliest blessings round.—
Not like that murd'rous band he came,
Who stain'd with blood the new-found West;
Nor as, with unrelenting breast,
From Britain's free, enlighten'd land,
Her sons now seek Angola's strand;
Each tie most facred to unbind,
To load with chains a brother's frame,
And plunge a dagger in the mind;
Mock the sharp anguish bleeding there
Of Nature in her last despair!

Great Cook! Ambition's lofty flame,
So oft directed to destroy,
Led Thee to circle with thy name,
The smile of love, and hope, and joy!
Those fires that lend the dang'rous blaze
The devious comet trails afar,
Might form the pure, benignant rays
That gild the morning's gentle star—
Sure, where the Hero's ashes rest,
The nations late emerg'd from night
Still haste—with love's unwearied care:

paral sili geoi a anca forda, il mo

That spot in lavish flowers is drest, And fancy's dear, inventive rite Still paid with fond observance there!

Ah no!—around his fatal grave
No lavish flowers were ever strew'd,
No votive gifts were ever laid—
His blood a savage shore bedew'd!
His mangled limbs, one hasty prayer,
One pious tear by friendship paid,
Were cast upon the raging wave!
Deep in the wild abyss he lies,
Far from the cherish'd scene of home;
Far, far from Her whose faithful sighs
A husband's trackless course pursue;
Whose tender fancy loves to roam
With Him o'er lands and oceans new;
And gilds with Hope's deluding form
The gloomy path-way of the storm.

Yet, Cook! immortal wreaths are thine!—
While Albion's grateful toil shall raise
The marble tomb, the trophied bust,
For ages faithful to its trust;
While, eager to record thy praise,
She bids the Muse of History twine
The chaplet of undying same,

And tell each polish'd land thy worth;
The ruder natives of the earth
Shall oft repeat thy honour'd name;
While infants catch the frequent found,
And learn to lisp the oral tale;
Whose fond remembrance shall prevail
Till Time has reach'd his destin'd bound;



FINIS.